

# Struggling to Survive with Regression Power in the Primordial Saint Sect

[ 1,418 words ]

## Chapter 251: Suo Huan

Facing the handsome young man in the mirror, True Person Miaoyin remained expressionless on the surface, yet her mind was constantly turning, preparing to respond to the other party's inquiries.

After all, this 【True Person Suo Huan】 was no ordinary person.

Strictly speaking, he was a cultivator from beyond the heavens, but the world he came from had already been destroyed, shattered by various True Lords and fully merged into this world.

He was the only one who had escaped.

If Lü Yang were here at this moment, he would definitely recognize the other party, because he had once discussed this matter with Chong Guang.

That was an accident during a battle for the Dao.

The Sword Pavilion, Primordial Saint Sect, Dao Court, and Pure Land—four True Lords had joined forces to capture the foreign world.

Even Foundation Establishment True Persons had taken the field, and only after a great battle did they finally take down that world.

That foreign world had almost condensed a Dao Fruit, but was interrupted by the True Lords, and only the chosen child of destiny managed to escape.

And that child of destiny was 【Suo Huan】 .

Since then, he had wandered overseas, continuously hunting disciples of the Four Great Sects who ventured into the sea.

Most people believed he was seeking revenge.

However, True Person Miaoyin knew that was not the case.

This cultivator from beyond the heavens had far greater ambitions.

He hunted the disciples of the Four Great Sects not for revenge, but for 【Qi Harvesting】 ! To ascend and seek Gold!

After all, when it came to the essence of this world, the disciples of the Four Great Sects were definitely among the best.

Especially the Foundation Establishment True Persons of the Four Great Sects.

Even rogue cultivators like Wu Cang possessed a certain level of talent and were suitable targets for 【Qi Harvesting】 .

If even Wu Cang was worth targeting, then Lü Yang was even more so.

After all, the name 【Yuan Tu】 now carried some fame overseas, and the notorious incident where he publicly humiliated the Sword Pavilion's fairy was spreading rapidly.

Thus, Suo Huan quickly realized what was going on.

However, he did not show any signs of being tempted.

Instead, he revealed a wary expression and said:

“You mean that True Person Yuan Tu? He caused quite a stir overseas not long ago. I almost went there myself. This is not someone to be trifled with.”

The "stir" Suo Huan mentioned naturally referred to Lü Yang's fishing operation overseas.

Affected by the killing intent of heaven and earth, Suo Huan, who had also been overseas at the time, had nearly gone over.

It was only because there was no karmic entanglement between him and Lü Yang that he ultimately refrained from entering the scene.

Otherwise, he would have already died violently by now.

“Rest assured.”

True Person Miaoyin quickly replied when she saw this:

“You saw the True Lords’ battle earlier.”

“True Lord Feixue was seriously injured and is about to retreat into seclusion to heal in her cave heaven.”

“At that time, he will have no True Lord backing him.”

“Moreover, the greater the risk, the greater the reward.”

At this point, True Person Miaoyin's tone carried a hint of temptation:

“If you kill Yuan Tu, your 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 will surely complete its Qi Harvesting.”

“Then you can seek Gold and have a chance to revive your world!”

“.”

True Person Miaoyin's words sent Suo Huan on the other side of the mirror into deep thought.

The 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 he mentioned was his greatest reliance while roaming overseas.

Because the 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 was the seed formed by his former world at the moment of its destruction.

It was the embryonic form of a Dao Fruit.

Since escaping with his life, he had been trying to use Qi Harvesting methods to help the 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 devour a Dao Fruit of this world.

In this way, not only could his former world and homeland be revived.

His cultivation would also soar, and not only could he achieve the position of True Lord, he could even obtain a new world as his Dao field and become a leader among the True Lords.

“This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity, you should understand that.”

True Person Miaoyin believed she understood Suo Huan's thoughts well.

After all, Suo Huan had killed so many inland cultivators and obtained many spiritual materials and treasures.

He always needed to offload those goods somewhere.

And she was one of Suo Huan's channels for that.

Thus, the two had secretly dealt with each other for a long time and knew each other's ways well.

Otherwise, True Person Miaoyin would not have chosen to approach him.

“Well?”

True Person Miaoyin spoke again.

This time, Suo Huan finally responded:

“Offering kindness for no reason is either flattery or theft. Miaoyin, what do you want this time?”

“I want you to protect me during my tribulation!”

True Person Miaoyin spoke in a deep voice:

“I have already reached the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage, and I have found both the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend energies.”

“I am just one step away from crossing the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation, but I lack confidence.”

“I only need you to open up your 【Lingxu】 Blessed Land and let me undergo my tribulation there to weaken the power of the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation.”

“As for the damage to your Blessed Land, I will naturally compensate you afterward with Yuan Tu.”

“With his talent, the Qi harvested after killing him will be more than enough to make up for all your losses.”

“Moreover, if I break through, I can join you in killing Yuan Tu.”

True Person Miaoyin laid out her bargaining chips.

Suo Huan thought for a moment after hearing this, then shook his head:

“... Kill Yuan Tu first, then you may enter the Blessed Land.”

“Fine!”

This was within True Person Miaoyin’s expectations.

So she nodded decisively:

“Then we kill Yuan Tu first, but I want you to sign a Heart-Link Contract with me.”

“Only then can we ensure that no one will break their word.”

“Of course.”

Suo Huan nodded without refusal.

Only then did True Person Miaoyin reveal a relaxed expression.

Changing the subject, she smiled brightly:

“Speaking of our deal... how much longer must I wait for our previous transaction?”

“A 【Heavenly Water Kan-He Treasure Pill】 requires rare spiritual materials, and I entrusted you to search overseas for me.”

“After all these years, do you have any leads?”

Suo Huan laughed upon hearing this:

“That’s quite the coincidence.”

“The timing of your message couldn’t be better.”

“I’ve had my eye on a target for a long time, one that perfectly matches your requirements.”

“Judging by the timing, it should be about ready to fall into the trap.”

“Oh?”

True Person Miaoyin was momentarily stunned upon hearing this.

In the next second, the image in the mirror suddenly became violently distorted, clearly due to the eruption of spiritual energy.

“... It’s here!”

Soon, Suo Huan’s somewhat cheerful laughter came through the mirror.

In the next moment, Suo Huan adjusted the mirror to reveal a grand formation radiating dazzling light into the sky.

The formation looked like a bright dome, completely suppressing a large section of the sea beneath it.

The originally turbulent sea water inside the formation had become as solid as rock.

No matter how powerful the magical techniques used, they could not stir up the slightest wave.

It was truly a formation designed to restrain the water element.

In the next moment—

“Roar!”

A resonating dragon roar echoed beneath the sea, followed by the explosion of waves.

From within, a mighty dragon body as tall as a mountain leapt into the air.

That dragon was none other than the mid-Foundation Establishment Dragon King, Sui Ying, who had previously been lured by Chong Guang's 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 to travel far inland.

It was the same Sui Ying who had once joined forces with Lü Yang to repel Ye Guyue and had even received half a piece of 【Yin Dragon Water】 from Lü Yang's hands.

Yet now, it looked utterly wretched.

Originally, Sui Ying had thought that by returning inland and reclaiming half of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , it could refine it into a pill and greatly advance its cultivation.

But unexpectedly, it had fallen into a trap instead.

Realizing this, Sui Ying immediately opened its blood-filled maw and let out a thunderous roar:

“Suo Huan! How dare you trap me with a formation!?”

Suo Huan smiled upon hearing this.

While holding the treasured mirror to relay the scene to True Person Miaoyin in real time, he casually flicked his sleeve and stepped into the formation.

“Sui Ying, you are mistaken.”

“I have dwelled overseas for over six hundred years, and we have met more than a few times.”

“Surely you know my ways by now?”

“What is there that I would not dare?”

The smiling words carried a chilling coldness that sent shivers down Sui Ying's spine, making it freeze mid-roar.

Sui Ying had clearly heard the killing intent in Suo Huan's voice.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,534 words ]

Chapter 252: The Importance of a Clone

"Suo Huan, let's talk this out."

Inside the grand formation, Sui Ying looked at Suo Huan who was gradually approaching.

He finally let go of the pride of being the blood descendant of the Dragon Lord and lowered his dragon head, speaking in a low and submissive tone:

"My father is, after all, the Dragon Lord of the Four Seas Sect, and I am his direct descendant. If you kill me, my father will definitely sense it. By then, you too will have no place to be buried."

"You set up this formation to trap me only because you want something. Spare my life, and you can take whatever you want from me."

Under the eaves, one had no choice but to lower their head.

Sui Ying had intended to act tough, but Suo Huan was utterly unreasonable.

With the cultivation of a late-stage Foundation Establishment Great True Person, he had even set up a formation to deal with him.

Under the suppression of such cultivation, Sui Ying had no way to resist.

By the time he came to his senses, he was already suppressed within the formation, his entire magical power rendered useless.

If not for his dragon body, he would have died on the spot.

Moreover, hearing that Suo Huan truly intended to kill him, Sui Ying dared not act tough any longer.

He decisively chose to bow his head, only hoping to keep his life.

Such a flexible attitude made Suo Huan laugh heartily while clapping his hands:

"The True Dragon Clan truly lives up to its reputation."

"No wonder the True Dragons were once hailed as the rulers of all rivers, lakes, and seas under heaven."

"But when the four Dao Lords appeared, the Dragon Lord immediately abandoned the mainland, curling up overseas, leaving only the seas behind."

"You!"

Sui Ying immediately showed anger upon hearing this.

The Dao Lords founding their sects and the True Dragons retreating overseas was a taboo topic in the Four Seas Sect.

After all, it was a great disgrace to the True Dragon Clan.

Yet, facing Suo Huan's overwhelming power, he had no choice but to suppress his anger and speak in a deep voice:

"Suo Huan! You outsider, do you really want to fight me to the death?"

"Fellow Daoist, you overestimate yourself."

Suo Huan's smile gradually faded.

His entire magical power expanded without displaying any divine ability, but a long river hanging high in the sky appeared, stretching from south to north.

In an instant, the power and status of a Great True Person merged with the formation, creating a magnificent scene.

Shimmering water light scattered across the land, like the Milky Way descending from the heavens.

It crashed steadily onto Sui Ying, wrapping his dragon body as if encasing it in a delicate piece of amber.

"Roar!"

Sui Ying still had the will to struggle.

But Suo Huan, using the power and status of a Great True Person along with the formation, left him no room to survive.

The weak dragon roar quickly faded into silence.

In the end, Suo Huan collected the entire grand formation without leaving any trace, transforming it into a glowing pill that fell into his palm.

Only then did he turn to look at the mirror.

"A pure-blooded True Dragon, cultivating in 【Great Sea Water】 , should be more than enough to refine the 【Heavenly Water Kan Harmony Treasure Pill】 you need."

Hearing this, far away in the Primordial Saint Sect, True Person Miaoyin felt a chill in her heart.

Suo Huan showing such a terrifying method was certainly to capture Sui Ying alive.

But wasn't it also a way to demonstrate his power to her?

This Great True Person from beyond the heavens truly possessed boundless divine abilities!

Thinking of this, True Person Miaoyin couldn't help but feel a surge of resentment toward Chong Guang.

'If it weren't for his refusal to listen to me and insisting on seeking that Golden one, I would have had a perfected Foundation Establishment to guard my side. How would Suo Huan dare to act so arrogantly?'

Though she thought this way, her face showed none of it.

Instead, she smiled sweetly and said:

"Thank you, Fellow Daoist Suo Huan. I have already arranged the Qi you requested. You should be able to find his whereabouts overseas soon."

Suo Huan smiled upon hearing this:

"Oh? Who is it this time?"

"Chong Ming."

True Person Miaoyin spoke calmly.

Chong Ming was originally her attempt to imitate the Lord of Mending Heaven Peak.

But now that Chong Guang was dead, Chong Ming himself was useless and could not help her overcome her tribulation.

She was forced to find another way and decided to make use of the waste by offering him as payment to Suo Huan.

Such a mentality made Suo Huan shake his head:

"Jiangbei Demon Sect truly lives up to its name. Though he is a natural-born spirit child, his foundation is not bad. Killing and refining him would at least yield a mid-grade Qi."

"Then it's settled."

True Person Miaoyin was indifferent, then changed the topic:

"As for Yuan Tu, I will be traveling with him soon to a world called 【Wan Wu Realm】 ."

"Once we enter the 【Wan Wu Realm】 , I will find a way to bring you in."

"By then, in the outer world, you can kill him without anyone knowing. As long as we cover our traces well, even True Lords won't be able to trace it back to us."

Suo Huan's eyes flashed with a mysterious light upon hearing this, but he quickly returned to normal and nodded:

"Then I shall wait for your good news."

"As for this True Dragon, according to our old agreement, I'll leave it to you first. We will have many more opportunities to work together in the future. I trust you won't go back on your word."

As his voice fell, the precious mirror's brilliance flickered, and all the images suddenly disappeared.

In their place, the pill sealing Sui Ying was sent across thousands of miles and landed in True Person Miaoyin's hand.

She immediately showed a pleased expression:

"Indeed, this trip was not in vain."

"Once I manage to refine this True Dragon."

"And obtain a 【Heavenly Water Kan Harmony Treasure Pill】 , if I also have the protection of a 【Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land】 , I'll have a seventy percent chance of surviving the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation this time."

"Curse that Chong Guang. If he had been willing to sacrifice that 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 to help me break through back then, would I have had to go through all this trouble?"

In the empty palace, True Person Miaoyin's voice gradually lowered.

At the same time, Lü Yang stepped out of the Manifestation Pavilion.

Returning to Mount Luofeng, he cast a spell to seal his cave dwelling's quiet chamber.

Only then did he take out the 【Nine Child Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 and a golden scroll.

『Secret Record of the Immortal Embryo's Worldly Journey』 !

This was the method suggested by the formation spirit of the pavilion after Lü Yang asked for a way to maximize the use of the 【Nine Child Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 .

The essence of this secret art lay in the concepts of 【Immortal Embryo】 and 【Worldly Journey】 .

As the name implied, it involved using top-grade rare treasures to nurture a Dao Seed.

Then, by continuously nurturing it with divine abilities day and night, it would eventually form a Dao Body, known as the 【Immortal Embryo】 .

Using this Dao Body to experience the world was known as 【Worldly Journey】 .

"In other words, it's a clone technique."

However, unlike ordinary clones, the 【Immortal Embryo】 cultivated through this method was essentially similar to a spirit being.

Once formed, it possessed its own destiny.

Any actions taken by the Immortal Embryo would only involve the embryo itself when tracing karmic consequences.

Lü Yang's true body, hiding in the shadows, would not bear any of it.

Such a wondrous method was truly a technique to avoid disaster and tribulation.

The only flaw was that it could not transfer the calamities already tied to the true body.

After all, though the Immortal Embryo and the true body shared one mind, they were, in reality, two separate entities.

"In any case, it's still usable."

Lü Yang smiled slightly.

The 【Nine Child Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 happened to meet the standard for nurturing an Immortal Embryo.

The quality of the embryo refined from it would be excellent.

"Let it go to the outer world in my place!"

Although he had the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 as a safety net, Lü Yang had always acted cautiously.

Even in battles, he only picked on the weak, the old, the sick, and the disabled.

Not to mention that now his greatest backing, Chong Guang, had fallen.

True Lord Qingcheng Feixue was also about to go into seclusion.

Under these circumstances, going outside would only provide opportunities for those with ill intentions.

Thus, a 【Immortal Embryo Clone】 was extremely important to him now.

"The benefits go to the true body, the dangers are borne by the clone."

"At the first sign of trouble, cut it off and flee. That's the true use of a clone."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately performed a hand seal.

He reached out and gently tapped the 【Nine Child Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 , causing a clear sword hum.

Then, he calculated the timing and thought to himself:

'At most three months, and everything will be ready!'

By then, he could head to the outer world, to the 【Wan Wu Realm】 , to gather Qi, explore the wonders of second-grade true arts, and prepare for his breakthrough to the late stage of Foundation Establishment!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,744 words ]

## Chapter 253: Small Characters

Overseas, in a remote sea region.

A streak of light could be seen speeding across the sky, and within the light was a young man with a gloomy expression: "Mother... is she really trying to harm me, just as Father said?"

The young man was none other than Chong Ming.

Since the incident in the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , this young man had become much more aged, even though his lifespan had not been shortened, a few strands of white hair had appeared at his temples.

The streak of light flew over the sea for a while before finally landing on an uninhabited island.

However, it seemed to pass through a transparent water curtain.

From outside the island, it looked desolate and lifeless.

But once inside, a young Daoist boy with red lips and white teeth suddenly appeared on the shore.

"Daoist Friend Xu."

A trace of complexity flashed in Chong Ming's eyes.

He sighed softly, stepped forward, and cupped his hands, saying: "Thank you for your efforts, Daoist Friend. Chong Ming will surely repay your kindness in the future."

If Lü Yang were here, he would certainly recognize him as well.

This young Daoist boy was none other than Xu Xin, who had been extremely at odds with Chong Ming on the Battlefield of Dao Seizure.

Now, he had also become a Foundation Establishment True Person.

"Save your breath."

Xu Xin shook his head at these words.

Then his figure suddenly turned blurry.

“I don’t want to get involved with you. Take care of yourself, little young master.”

After speaking, his figure quietly shattered.

Seeing this, Chong Ming could only sigh softly and muttered to himself, “Father said that Mother wants to harm me, but why did he still tell me to follow Mother’s instructions to go out to sea?”

Back in the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , when Chong Guang had sent Chong Ming out of the 【Blessed Land of Dongyang】 , he had given a few instructions.

Out of trust in his father, Chong Ming had strictly followed them.

Although the heartless actions of his mother, the True Person Miaoyin, had greatly disappointed him, he had still pulled himself together:

“No matter what, I can’t return to the Sacred Sect anymore.”

Chong Ming took out a Bagua Compass from his robe.

This was a supreme treasure that Chong Guang had given him to conceal his presence from the heavens.

With this treasure protecting him, no one should be able to find him.

At this thought, Lü Yang’s figure suddenly flashed through Chong Ming’s mind.

“At worst, I’ll just endure!”

“I’ll outlive Mother!”

As one of the most outstanding disciples of the younger generation in the Sacred Sect, Lü Yang’s deeds had long since spread far and wide.

This included outliving Arhat Fulong and tricking the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak to death.

With the advanced experience of a predecessor like Lü Yang, Chong Ming was not particularly confused.

He quickly set his strategy: "Youth is my greatest advantage. Mother is already in her third lifetime. In terms of combat and schemes, I can't match her. Then I'll compete with her in lifespan. I'll surely outlive her one day!"

If luck was on his side and True Person Miaoyin perished during her tribulation, it would only take a few years.

If luck was bad and she broke through to the late Foundation Establishment stage, it did not matter either.

At worst, he would just have to wait two more lifetimes.

As long as he could endure, there would always be a chance.

Thinking this, Chong Ming gradually calmed down.

However, just as he turned around, he was horrified to discover that on the shore of the island, above the emerald white waves, a figure had appeared!

"Splash, splash, splash."

The sound of waves drifted over from a distance, crashing against the rocks on the shore, and also pounding heavily in Chong Ming's heart, making him feel as if he had fallen into an ice cave in an instant.

The visitor rode the waves, stepping lightly on the surf, landing casually on the shore.

He appeared like a scholar out for a spring outing, with a kind smile hanging on his face.

However, although he was smiling, his eyes were icy cold, devoid of any warmth.

"You really made me search for quite a while."

In an instant, Chong Ming's expression froze slightly.

He wanted to resist, but an indescribable, overwhelming pressure had already descended upon him.

'It's over!'

Although Chong Ming had just reached Foundation Establishment, he was not inexperienced.

Even when facing a mid-Foundation Establishment True Person, he still had the ability to make a move.

But the True Person before him merely stood there, and his mana and divine sense were already sealed.

Forget making a move; the only reason he could still think was because the other party had not sealed his consciousness.

This kind of terrifying suppression, akin to a difference in existential rank, could only be achieved by a late Foundation Establishment Great True Person!

At this moment, Chong Ming was in utter despair.

However, to his surprise, the visitor did not immediately seize him and refine him.

Instead, after examining him for a moment, he actively released the suppression.

Then, the visitor stared straight at him.

“You recognize me.”

These four simple words carried no hint of a question, only complete certainty, as if the facts had already been confirmed.

Chong Ming couldn't help but lower his head.

“...Father mentioned you a few times.”

“Daoist Friend Chong Guang, huh.”

Suo Huan smiled at these words.

He then clasped his hands behind his back and walked up to Chong Ming, speaking calmly:

“You have a good father.”

“I've spent a long time overseas, making it inconvenient to communicate with the important figures of the Sacred Sect. Therefore, I needed some cover to muddy the waters of causality.”

“Your father secured this position for you, saving your life and pulling you out of the vortex.”

“Such good fortune, truly good fortune.”

“Far better than mine.”

Suo Huan shook his head and sighed, while Chong Ming wore a confused expression.

‘What does he mean?’

But soon, his thoughts came to a halt.

A faint light slowly emerged from his body, weaving into the silhouette of a graceful woman.

Seeing this, Suo Huan quickly stepped back.

“This little one pays respect to True Monarch Qiluo.”

The figure of that graceful woman was none other than 【Zeng Cai Qiluo True Monarch】 , who had once refined pills for Lü Yang.

And now, she had appeared overseas!

Suo Huan felt a chill in his hands and feet as he sneered inwardly:

‘That Miaoyin really is foolish and unaware. Did she never consider that as Chong Guang’s Dao Companion, every action she takes is likely observed by the True Monarch in the heavens?’

‘On the surface, this seems like a transaction between me and Miaoyin, with her sending her own son Chong Ming to me for Qi extraction. The causality appears clear and indisputable. In reality, however, this is just the True Monarch using Chong Ming’s causality to secretly meet with me. Miaoyin is nothing more than the True Monarch’s mouthpiece!’

At this moment, 【Zeng Cai Qiluo True Monarch】 finally spoke:

“Speak, why have you come to see me?”

“This little one merely wishes to share in your burdens, my Lord.”

Suo Huan’s tone was calm and his manners were impeccable as he performed a Daoist bow, speaking softly:

“Though I reside overseas, I have still heard of the great upheavals in recent days.”

“Daoist Friend Chong Guang truly lived up to his reputation as the rising star of the Sacred Sect, shaking the world single-handedly.”

“Unfortunately, he failed at the last moment, leaving one sighing in regret.”

“This little one lacks the means of Daoist Friend Chong Guang and is nothing more than a stray dog, a small character.”

“A small character can only drift with the tide.”

As he spoke, a trace of emotion finally appeared in Suo Huan’s voice:

“This little one is willing to bear witness to the 【Long Flow of Water】 , to share your burdens and break the current impasse.”

He wore a solemn expression and respectfully said:

“My Lord, you should know that this little one is an overseas cultivator. I do not cultivate life essence, nor do I refine innate talents. I have always relied on Qi extraction.”

“The 【Blessed Land of Lingxu】 in my possession is of the water element.”

“In other words, as long as it is a water-elemental position, I actually have a slim chance of attaining it.”

“Even if it is the 【Long Flow of Water】 !”

As Suo Huan’s words fell, 【Zeng Cai Qiluo True Monarch】 narrowed her eyes:

“You do have some courage. Drifting with the tide does suit you.”

This was indeed a blind spot!

As an overseas cultivator, Suo Huan had no need for 【Earth of Chen】 .

His essence lay in Qi extraction, usurping the elemental positions of this world!

Once he usurped the 【Long Flow of Water】 , it would be equivalent to attaining it.

And if the mysterious True Monarch, suspected to be Ang Xiao, lost the 【Long Flow of Water】 , they would become incomplete in the Five Elements, instantly falling from the late Golden Core stage!

However, this was not without risks.

Suo Huan’s pursuit of the Golden Core did not require 【Earth of Chen】 , but this also made it difficult for him to resonate with the elemental positions.

Moreover, as an overseas cultivator, devouring the elemental positions of this world would inevitably bring great trouble and establish a deadly enmity with the mysterious True Monarch!

Under such circumstances, the difficulty of pursuing the Golden Core was several times higher than that of Chong Guang.

Even if he succeeded, it would be hard to stabilize his position as a True Monarch.

Especially with the Millennium Catastrophe approaching, a slight misstep could turn him into the next Daoist Hong Yun.

Yet Suo Huan did not hesitate in the slightest.

He had once been the chosen son of a world, full of youthful vigor.

Now, however, he bent down naturally, like an old man on the brink of death.

“This little one asks for nothing else.”

He lowered his head humbly and said:

“I am willing to let you plant a restriction in me, to serve you with all my might, asking only for a fruit position... even if it is just for a single lifetime.”

Primordial Saint Sect, Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds.

As the three-month period drew near, Lü Yang pushed open the door of his meditation chamber and walked inside.

In the center of the chamber, seated on a meditation cushion, was a handsome young man.

This man’s appearance was exactly the same as his own.

However, there was a sharp aura between his brows.

After all, it had been nurtured with a flying sword as its embryo, and its foundation carried the sharpness of a sword cultivator that could not be erased.

Even the opening and closing of its lips, the heartbeat, and breathing were completely synchronized with Lü Yang’s own body.

Seeing this, Lü Yang immediately showed a satisfied expression:

“The Immortal Fetus is complete!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,263 words ]

## Chapter 254: Heavenly Demon Enters the World

Inside the quiet chamber, Lü Yang looked curiously at the celestial fetus avatar he had nurtured over three months using the 【Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】 .

"Not bad, not bad!"

Lü Yang nodded in satisfaction and slowly circulated his mana.

Almost simultaneously, the celestial fetus avatar before him opened its eyes, and their gazes met.

A peculiar sensation arose in Lü Yang's sea of consciousness.

His previously unified perspective suddenly split, allowing him to observe the surroundings from both the avatar's and his own viewpoints.

This occurred because he hadn't infused his divine sense into the celestial fetus avatar.

If he had, everything could have been controlled by that strand of divine sense.

Lü Yang would only need to receive information from the divine sense when necessary, avoiding the hassle of controlling both bodies simultaneously.

However, Lü Yang chose not to do so.

The reason was simple: splitting his divine sense was too dangerous!

A slight misstep could lead the avatar to develop its own consciousness, which Lü Yang couldn't tolerate.

"It's better if I control it personally!"

Although this meant that when using the avatar, his main body would have to enter a secluded state, he hadn't planned on moving around anyway.

"Just in case..."

With this thought, Lü Yang formed a hand seal and began inscribing bright restrictions onto the celestial fetus avatar.

These restrictions were all designed for self-destruction, and none had a method of removal.

This ensured that with a single thought, Lü Yang could instantly reduce the avatar to ashes, leaving not even a piece of flesh behind—a precautionary measure.

After completing this, Lü Yang took out another item.

It was an earthy yellow aura that, merely by being held in his hand, exuded an indescribable heaviness, like a towering mountain.

Earth Vein Qi!

This was a gift from Duo Bao Tongzi during his time in the Kingdom of Qing, which he had treasured, intending to use it at a critical moment to trap an enemy.

"Using it now is just right!"

Lü Yang placed the Earth Vein Qi in his palm, then gathered his mana between his lips and gently blew.

The Earth Vein Qi dispersed and merged into the celestial fetus avatar.

"With the integration of this Earth Vein Qi, the current celestial fetus avatar becomes a self-destructing truck.

Anyone harboring ill intentions towards me and destroying my avatar will be subject to heavenly retribution!

Meanwhile, I can avoid any karmic entanglements through the avatar's calamity-avoiding effect."

A perfect combination!

Next, Lü Yang pondered for a moment and handed the **【Invisible Sword】** to the celestial fetus avatar.

He then successively took out several superior spiritual treasures from his body.

**【Hundred Refinements Danger-Subduing Mysterious Cloak】** .

**【Purple Micro Officially Bestowed Supreme Golden Seal】** .

【Peaceful Purity Aura Treasure Pagoda】 .

Additionally, numerous spiritual treasures and magical tools used to construct the 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 .

Except for the four supreme treasures—the Abhī Sword, Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, Heaven-Questioning Instrument, and Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict—Lü Yang gave all others to the celestial fetus avatar.

"Now it looks the part."

Lü Yang smiled slightly, then circulated his mana to interact with the celestial fetus avatar.

Soon, the divine light on his body faded one by one.

Immediately, the same divine light emanated from around the celestial fetus avatar, elevating its cultivation to the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm.

Even the blessing of the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 was not omitted.

At a glance, it appeared to be a mid-stage perfected True Person!

"Unfortunately, once I sever the connection, it will immediately revert to the mundane."

"If it could maintain mid-Foundation Establishment combat power without my support, that would be truly formidable—essentially creating a True Person out of thin air."

But for now, it's sufficient.

Lü Yang nodded, chose not to go out, and sat on the meditation cushion with his main body.

The celestial fetus avatar moved slightly in place, then confidently walked out.

"Yuan Tu made me wait!"

At Sacred Fire Cliff, True Person Miaoyin watched as "Lü Yang" descended in a light beam.

Her delicate brows furrowed slightly, sensing something amiss, though she couldn't pinpoint it.

"Apologies for keeping you waiting, madam."

Lü Yang chuckled and cupped his hands, saying, "After all, it's beyond the heavens, fraught with dangers. I had to make thorough preparations. I hope you don't mind."

"Not at all. How could I blame you?" True Person Miaoyin covered her mouth and laughed softly, temporarily suppressing her doubts.

She then reminded, "The 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 we're heading to has already nurtured a fruit position and is highly sensitive.

Once we enter, we'll immediately become targets."

"I see."

Lü Yang nodded and curiously asked, "In that case, how should we enter the realm? Must we abandon our cultivation and start from scratch in the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】?"

"How could that be!"

True Person Miaoyin laughed, "We're entering to gather Qi and seize the essence of heaven and earth to enhance our Dao practice.

Abandoning our cultivation would be putting the cart before the horse."

"Naturally, we enter at full strength!"

Lü Yang immediately understood.

So-called "Qi gathering" was essentially robbery.

Since we're here to rob, how could we abide by the realm's rules?

"However, fellow Daoist, don't be careless. There are formidable figures in the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang became curious, "Oh? What kind of mystical cultivation does the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 practice?"

Are there cultivators comparable to great True Persons?"

"Naturally, there are."

True Person Miaoyin nodded, then shook her head, "However, the fruit position in the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 was recently born.

Under normal circumstances, it wouldn't allow great True Persons to emerge.

Only when we enter does it, for self-preservation, hasten the birth of great True Persons to try and eliminate us."

"Oh?"

True Person Miaoyin's words revealed something that greatly concerned Lü Yang: a newly born fruit position doesn't permit the emergence of great True Persons?

Why?

While pondering, Lü Yang followed True Person Miaoyin to a grand hall.

Inside, intricate and dense array patterns dazzled the eyes.

"This place is called the 【Hall of Passing Through Heaven】 ."

True Person Miaoyin explained, "Like the Secret Realm of Law Refinement, it's left by the ancestor—a superior true treasure.

We use this treasure to travel to the outer heavens."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang's expression turned solemn.

Nascent Soul-level treasure!

Next, True Person Miaoyin stood inside the 【Hall of Passing Through Heaven】 , cupped her hands, and said, "Lord of Passing Through Heaven, please send us to the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 ."

The next moment, a radiant light appeared within the hall.

From the light, a figure hopped out—a handsome Daoist child, looking adorable and wearing loose Daoist robes.

He held paper and brush in his hand, his eyes shimmering with starlight, displaying myriad phenomena.

Drool still lingered at the corner of his mouth, as if he had just been awakened from sleep.

He quickly wiped his mouth, then clasped his hands behind his back and walked up to True Person Miaoyin and Lü Yang with an air of seniority.

"So, you're the ones disturbing this old ancestor's seclusion?"

The Daoist child spoke arrogantly, holding paper and brush in one hand, while his chubby other hand stretched out, shaking vigorously at the two.

What's this about?

Lü Yang was puzzled until he saw True Person Miaoyin, familiar with the process, take out a magical treasure and hand it over.

Only then did he realize... this was a bribe!

Damn, worthy of being the Holy Sect!

Lü Yang grumbled inwardly but maintained a calm expression, also handing over a cute-looking magical treasure.

The Daoist child immediately beamed with joy.

"Good, good! Not bad, sensible!"

"The 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 , right? Let this old ancestor see... Hmm, you're cultivating the 'Heavenly Unity Supreme Law Governing All Heavens,' indeed, it's this realm."

After speaking, the Daoist child waved his hand.

The next moment, Lü Yang felt a dizzying sensation, as if he were in a void.

His consciousness was instantly elevated, sent into the sky, and then plummeted!

"Boom!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 255 : Life Star Hanging High, Sun and Moon Sharing the Sky**

[ 1,528 words ]

Chapter 255: Life Star Hanging High, Sun and Moon Sharing the Sky

Kaifang City, Luo Family Village.

This village, resembling a paradise isolated from the world, sat with its back against Tianzhu Mountain.

The villagers usually entered the mountain to hunt, gather herbs, or chop wood, then carried them to the city for sale.

And on an open ground in the village, a thin-faced boy around eleven or twelve years old was practicing his punches.

Because of a lack of food, his face looked pale and sickly.

However, each punch he threw carried great focus, and from time to time, he let out grunting sounds.

“Use more strength! Do not slack off!”

Beside the boy stood a burly, bare-chested man.

“Practicing fists is like rowing against the current.”

“If you stop for a day, your skills will diminish.”

“If you stop for ten days, even the greatest ability will waste away.”

“How else can you sense your Life Star?”

The man held a bamboo stick in his hand.

As he scolded, he struck the boy's body with the stick to correct his posture and flaws in the punching technique.

Both his voice and actions seemed extremely harsh.

Only when he saw the boy gritting his teeth and persevering did a rare trace of warmth flash in his eyes.

Just like that, half an hour passed.

“Alright, stop now, take a break.”

As soon as the man spoke, he did not relax but kept staring at the boy.

He saw that the boy did not collapse immediately but slowly withdrew from his punching stance.

“Hoo.”

A long breath was exhaled.

It lingered in the air like a white arrow hanging mid-air.

After finishing all this, the boy stood steadily in place.

“Not bad!”

The man finally nodded in satisfaction.

“Looks like you didn’t forget what I taught you yesterday.”

“The biggest taboo in practicing fists is losing your breath.”

“Even if you are exhausted to the limit and can’t hold on anymore, you still must not slack off when resting.”

“Otherwise, if your breath leaks, all your practice for the past half-day would be wasted.”

“Hehe.”

The boy scratched his head with a somewhat simple and slightly proud expression.

Then, he raised his head to look at the sky above.

At a glance, countless stars glittered.

Whether it was sunrise or sunset, even in daylight, the sky still had countless stars twinkling.

Some were brilliant.

Some were dim.

Some had yet to be lit.

The teachings he had received since childhood told him that the stars in the sky corresponded to people on earth.

They symbolized the destinies of all living beings.

Thinking of this, a hint of anticipation flashed in the boy’s eyes.

He could not help but look at the man and ask, “Master, when will I be able to light my Life Star?”

“Today.”

The man replied casually.

This left the boy stunned for a long while before he reacted.

“Today!? Then why didn’t you tell me earlier, Master!”

“If I had told you earlier, it wouldn’t work.”

A smile appeared at the corner of the man’s mouth as he spoke softly.

“You just finished a set of 【Responding to Destiny Fist】 .”

“Now, raise your head to the sky and slowly close your eyes.”

The boy hurried to follow the instructions.

Strangely, this seemingly meaningless action unexpectedly gave the boy an indescribable feeling.

“My Life Star...”

In a daze, the boy’s consciousness seemed to connect with the vast sky.

He saw a dim star slowly light up under his gaze.

In the next moment, a thought descended along the starlight—

【Villager】

These simple two words left the boy dazed for a long time.

Only then did he open his eyes, finding the man staring at him with a bit of nervousness.

“What Life Star did you get?”

“It’s 【Villager】 ,” the boy answered truthfully.

The man’s expression remained unchanged, but a trace of disappointment flashed in his eyes.

“ 【Villager】 , huh... Well, living a peaceful life isn’t too bad either.”

Hearing this, the boy looked puzzled.

“Can’t a 【Villager】 practice martial arts?”

“Of course, you can.”

The man patted the boy’s head but sighed again.

“However, the wonder of 【Villager】 is merely that you can eat anything when you’re starving.”

“And when it comes to martial arts, since you are not a 【Warrior Soldier】 , you lack the corresponding mystical enhancement.”

“Practicing will yield half the results for twice the effort.”

“Rather than wasting time, it’s better to honestly farm the land and live well as a 【Villager】 .”

“If you recklessly try to change your fate, you might end up worse than before.”

At this point, the man sighed again.

This was his personal experience.

Unlike the boy, he had been a 【Warrior Soldier】 .

However, he had not been content with merely being a foot soldier.

He had longed to become a general in the army.

But that was not his destiny.

Without the blessing of a higher Life Star, everything went wrong.

Trying to defy his destined path had only brought him misfortune.

As a result, he was gravely injured in a great war.

If not for that, he would not have retired to this remote mountain village to live in seclusion.

“But Master...” the boy lowered his head but then looked up hopefully.

“Does having the Life Star of 【Villager】 mean I’ll be a villager for the rest of my life?”

“...Not necessarily.”

The boy was still young.

The man did not want to crush his spirit, so he changed his tone.

“Although the Life Stars of the world seem to be predestined, there are exceptions.”

“For example, when the 【Heavenly Demon Enters the World】 , countless variables arise.”

“At that time, even if you are a 【Villager】 , you still have the hope of becoming a 【Heavenly Son】 .”

“I know, I know!”

The boy immediately raised his hand.

“The Bright Heavenly Son and the Night Heavenly Son, their Life Stars correspond to the Sun and the Moon in the sky!”

“Correct.”

The man smiled slightly.

“To control the Sun Star is to be the Bright Heavenly Son.”

“To control the Moon Star is to be the Night Heavenly Son.”

“Both hold the supreme positions under Heaven.”

“Whenever the 【Heavenly Demon Enters the World】 arrives, all martial artists in the world will feel the call.”

“In the end, two Heavenly Sons will rise together to slay the Demons from beyond the realm.”

“At that time, the Heavenly Son will unify the world and bring long-awaited peace.”

At this point, the man’s eyes also revealed a look of longing.

“According to ancient records, the last 【Heavenly Demon Enters the World】 happened a thousand years ago.”

“At that time, pressured by the might of the Heavenly Demons, the rulers of the Sixteen States of the Central Plains joined forces.”

“Right on the peak of Tianzhu Mountain behind us, they swore a blood oath to establish the Era of Prosperous Martiality and resist the Heavenly Demons together.”

“Under their rule, brave warriors and wise strategists rose like clouds and rain, all fighting to the death.”

“Only then did the dynasty endure to this day.”

The man had a decent gift for storytelling.

Under his narration, a soul-stirring history slowly unfolded, leaving the boy completely entranced.

He wished he had been born in that era of great strife.

However, just then—

“General Chen! Something terrible has happened!”

Several young men from outside the village ran over with bows and short blades in their hands, their faces full of panic.

“There’s a disturbance in the mountain, and wild beasts are charging down!”

“What!?”

The man’s expression instantly changed in shock.

Tianzhu Mountain spanned hundreds of miles.

It teemed with countless poisonous insects and ferocious beasts.

There were likely several Beast Kings among them.

What kind of event could cause such a massive disturbance in the mountain?

‘Could it be a Beast Tide?’

‘Impossible.’

‘The City Lord had made an agreement with the Beast Lords of Tianzhu Mountain years ago.’

‘Both sides had agreed not to infringe upon each other.’

‘Why would the Beast Lords suddenly unleash a Beast Tide?’

Although he thought so, the man did not dare to take it lightly.

After all, Luo Family Village was located in a remote corner outside the mountain.

In the face of a Beast Tide, it was like a tiny pebble in the ocean, destined to be swallowed in an instant.

Perhaps only Kaifang City nearby could barely serve as a reef to withstand the waves.

Thinking of this, the man made a decisive call.

“Gather all the villagers immediately and retreat toward Kaifang City.”

“This is beyond our ability to handle.”

“We must report to the City Lord first.”

Rumble!

Before the man finished speaking, a thunderous boom interrupted him.

It sounded like thunder erupting from the mountain.

At first, it seemed as if Tianzhu Mountain itself had collapsed!

In an instant, countless villagers of Luo Family Village showed looks of horror.

Even the man, who considered himself well-experienced, stood dumbfounded, staring wide-eyed at the narrow rift that had suddenly torn open in the sky above Tianzhu Mountain!

“The sky... is torn...!?”

Scenes described in ancient texts flashed through the man's mind.

A story he had only ever read in books was now unfolding right before his eyes, leaving him at a loss.

Heavenly Demon Enters the World?

Heavenly Demon Enters the World!

In an instant, billions of stars in the sky lit up at the same time.

Especially the Sun Star and Moon Star, which shone brightly and cast their light upon the rift.

Almost at the same time, all martial artists who had lit their Life Stars saw the image of the rift in their minds.

They felt as if the usual constraints from their Life Stars had been lifted completely.

No longer bound by the identity their Life Star had given them.

A fierce and irresistible urge surged in their hearts:

“Kill!”

Kill the one who comes out of the rift!

The one who takes the head first shall be the King of the World!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,450 words ]

Chapter 256: I Want Them All!

As the vision before his eyes gradually cleared, Lü Yang raised his head and looked up at the sky, and what entered his sight was a magnificent scene where countless stars hung high and the sun and moon shared the same sky.

"Interesting."

Lü Yang roughly sensed his surroundings and immediately felt the hostility of this realm, as the spiritual energy around him felt like countless sharp silver needles.

If one rashly absorbed the spiritual energy of this world, the result would only be a body covered in cuts and bruises, and there might even be poison within the spiritual energy, corrupting one's foundation.

This proved that this realm was already dangerous for Foundation Establishment cultivators, let alone for someone at the peak of Qi Refining, for whom survival would be even harder.

After all, without sufficient rank, the peak of Qi Refining would easily be assimilated by the realm itself.

Only a Foundation Establishment True Person, having secured their Dao foundation, could maintain their existence without being eroded by the power of the realm, even when entering different worlds.

Lü Yang then checked the condition of his main body.

'No problem, I can pull my consciousness back at any moment, and if my main body goes to the 【Hall of Heaven-Piercing】 , I can even teleport to my clone's side!'

The next second, he looked up at the firmament again, feeling that those stars in the sky seemed like countless eyes, and the starlight made him uncomfortable.

This feeling was all too familiar to Lü Yang.

'Another heavenly killing intent!'

As an outsider, facing a world's killing intent, ordinary means were completely ineffective at avoiding it, which was one of the dangers of harvesting external spiritual energy.

At that moment, True Person Miaoyin on the other side spoke:

"Yuan Tu, if we act together, our target will be too obvious and easy to track. Why don't we split up for now and meet again after concealing our presence?"

This was clearly just an excuse.

In reality, True Person Miaoyin merely wanted to separate from Lü Yang to avoid being exposed, and then follow the earlier agreement with Suo Huan to summon him to kill Lü Yang, using this as a bargaining chip to secure herself a chance to cross her tribulation in a blessed land.

Little did she know that Lü Yang was more than happy to see this happen.

The two readily agreed.

True Person Miaoyin immediately flew away in a streak of light, while Lü Yang stayed where he was and began calculating the information about the 【Wanwu Realm】 .

"Destiny Star Martial Practitioners, Sun and Moon Sons of Heaven."

Soon, Lü Yang had grasped the core of it: "Cultivators of this world anchor all their cultivation onto their Destiny Star, which evidently manifests as a form of Dao Fruit."

"What a refined Dao Fruit!" Lü Yang sighed.

"This type of Dao Fruit is somewhat similar to 【City Wall Soil】 , and is probably the kind that the Dao Court favors the most. In fact, this entire system resembles the Dao Court's structure."

In other words, the Dao Fruits of this realm could be of great use to him as well.

"However, in my current state, I can't cultivate at all. At best, I could snatch a bit and run. The gains would be there, but ultimately limited."

Lü Yang frowned deeply, pondering how to maximize his gains.

However, just then, he suddenly felt a surge of energy within his body, and the surrounding spiritual energy, which had treated him like a mortal enemy wishing to tear him apart, abruptly paused, and then its attitude changed completely.

'...The energy of the Earth Vein?'

Lü Yang raised an eyebrow, sensing the cause of the realm's sudden shift in attitude.

After a brief calculation, a strange expression appeared on his face:

"You want the Earth Vein energy in my hands?"

"Of course, the Earth Vein energy counts as a foreign energy to this realm as well. If it can devour it, it would definitely benefit greatly."

"But what benefit do I get?"

"Though I'm not under heavenly punishment right now, if I return after bringing the Earth Vein energy here without leaving it behind, won't Heaven and Earth kill me for sure..."

In other words—

"...You have to pay more!"

The spiritual energy of Heaven and Earth trembled, as if it had fallen into a deep silence.

After a long time, Lü Yang suddenly felt a beam of starlight fall upon him.

"Hmm?"

Looking up, Lü Yang immediately sensed that the killing intent of Heaven and Earth had been completely withdrawn, and a star in the firmament shone brightly.

"Is this... a bribe?"

Lü Yang frowned.

The intelligence of the Dao Fruit of this 【Wanwu Realm】 seemed abnormally high, completely different from the Dao Fruits of his own world.

Still, the offer was quite good.

In this realm, everyone had a Destiny Star, which was like an identity card issued by Heaven and Earth. Anyone without one would be recognized as an outsider at a glance.

Conversely, if he could obtain a Destiny Star, it would be like securing a green card for the 【Wanwu Realm】 , making communication with the locals much easier and allowing him to act more freely.

Otherwise, he would have to constantly hide, dodging heavenly killing intent while seeking to steal the realm's essence.

There was only one problem.

"How do I know you won't go back on your word?"

Lü Yang measured by his own standards.

If it were him, he would definitely try to trick the Earth Vein energy out of someone's hands first and then immediately turn hostile once he got it.

"How about this, I'll give you a little first, and the rest later."

As soon as Lü Yang finished speaking, the spiritual energy of Heaven and Earth responded eagerly, clearly impatient.

Seeing this, Lü Yang immediately separated one percent of the Earth Vein energy and merged it into the realm.

Almost at the same moment, he felt a new sensation in his heart.

"Whoosh, whoosh!"

The latest novel was first released at Six Nine Book Bar!

He saw a Destiny Star light up in the firmament, and its corresponding mystical attribute descended through the starlight and entered Lü Yang's mind, transforming into two large characters:

【Villager】 .

"The mystical attribute is the ability to eat anything when hungry—bran, dirt, tree bark... How the hell is this a villager? This is a disaster victim in the making!"

Lü Yang calculated again, and the causal thread in the void immediately brought a response from Heaven and Earth: he needed more Earth Vein energy to unlock stronger Destiny Stars.

In simple terms: he needed to spend more.

Lü Yang immediately sneered.

He then decisively put away the remaining Earth Vein energy and began circulating the 『Qiantian One Origin Supreme Law Governing All Heavens』 .

It was clear that this so-called Destiny Star was a form of Heaven and Earth essence.

Lü Yang devoured the starlight entirely.

Soon, behind him, a light projection slowly emerged—a towering figure with three heads and six arms, green-faced with fangs, surrounded by dancing mystic flames.

"Good, good, good."

Seeing this, Lü Yang's face lit up with joy:

"Initial energy absorption successful. I finally have the foundation to truly cultivate this 【Qiantian Supreme Law Body Governing All Phenomena】 !"

The Law Body was the true guardian of the Dao.

Divine powers, Dao arts, and spirit treasures were all external objects, often shattering easily when faced with the heavenly thunder tribulation of breaking through the late Foundation Establishment stage.

Only the Law Body was different.

"Refining the Law Body to guard the Dao can increase my chances of surviving the heavenly thunder tribulation by at least thirty percent... Unfortunately, a mere 【Villager】 Destiny Star is far from enough."

At this thought, Lü Yang couldn't help but entertain a bold idea.

If even a single strand of Earth Vein energy could make the Dao Fruit of this 【Wanwu Realm】 so eager and greedy, what if he offered an entire Earth Vein?

Could that help him gather all the external energy resources needed to cultivate the 【Qiantian Supreme Law Body Governing All Phenomena】 in one go?

"No matter what, I must complete this Law Body!"

What solidified Lü Yang's resolve was not just the power of the Law Body, but something even more important—

"This Law Body is named 【All Phenomena】 precisely because it possesses the ability to encompass all phenomena. Once cultivated, it can continuously be enhanced by fusing external objects."

"In other words, once it is completed, I can integrate the Abyss Sword, the Myriad Spirits Banner, the Imperial Palace Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict, and many other spirit treasures into the Law Body!"

Until now, Lü Yang had always been troubled by having gained too much this lifetime and not knowing what to pick if he had to restart.

But if his Immortal Embryo clone could cultivate the 【Qiantian Supreme Law Body Governing All Phenomena】 and package all of this lifetime's gains into the Law Body, then by choosing the Immortal Embryo clone upon restarting, he could take everything back with him in one go!

Abyss Sword? Myriad Spirits Banner? Imperial Palace Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict?

I want them all!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 257 : This Time, I'm Really Going to Be a Good Person!**

[ 1,552 words ]

Chapter 257: This Time, I'm Really Going to Be a Good Person!

Although the ideal was beautiful, the reality was still quite harsh, as cultivating the 【Universal Embodiment of Heaven's All-Encompassing Law】 was far more difficult than ordinary Dao techniques.

"The key lies in the Qi gathering."

"After all, only by mastering the cultivation method can one achieve the embodiment, and pushing the technique to perfection requires an unimaginable amount of Heaven's Realm Qi."

Generally speaking, the higher one's cultivation, the harder it was to gather Qi.

Because the higher your cultivation, the greater the malice from the Heaven's Realm towards you, and the more Qi you needed, making it easier to be targeted and killed by the Heaven's Realm.

While Lü Yang was contemplating this, he suddenly seemed to sense something, raised his head, and looked into the distance, only to see a mortal-looking army approaching.

Over a dozen banners fluttered in the wind, and the surging blood and Qi of the soldiers condensed into red light that shot up into the sky.

In an instant, the sky brightened!

The vast blood and Qi stirred the celestial phenomena, and every person had a corresponding life star, which at this moment interconnected, forming a dazzling map of a myriad of stars!

".Oh?"

Seeing this, Lü Yang immediately narrowed his eyes, because the moment the army formed their formation, he felt a powerful suppression.

'This is... suppression of position!'

Originally, as a Foundation Establishment cultivator, unless it was the Dao Court using formations to simulate Foundation Establishment, ordinary armies meant nothing to him.

However, things were different now.

After that army formed their formation, linking with the stars in the sky, the effect was not like the Dao Court's position elevation but rather a suppression, forcibly lowering part of his position, even reducing his surrounding light by half.

'What a formidable technique!'

Lü Yang was astonished, unaware that the opposing army's general was even more shocked to see Lü Yang still displaying magical power while facing the "Thousand Troops" head-on.

"How is this possible!"

The general's name was Wu Changkong, the lord of the only city nearby—Kaihuang City—and the strongest life star holder in the surrounding hundreds of miles.

He held the 【Earth Subduing Star】 .

It was said that there were a total of one hundred and eight Demonic Stars in the world, the pinnacle of life stars, and those blessed by a Demonic Star were destined to possess extraordinary abilities far beyond ordinary warriors.

Wu Changkong was such a person.

As the holder of the 【Earth Subduing Star】 , he was born with golden eyes, a leopard-like head, and round eyes, naturally endowed with divine strength, advancing in martial arts at an incredible speed.

At this moment, his blood and Qi were the strongest in the army, and with the blessing of the life star, ordinary soldiers would be injured just by looking directly at him.

Yet now, he wore an expression of terror.

The reason he had hastily gathered his army was because he had discovered that the rift in the "Heaven's Revelation" appeared within his territory at Tianzhu Mountain.

If he could seize the lead and kill the target, he could advance even further!

Therefore, upon seeing Lü Yang, he had ordered the army to attack without hesitation, thinking it would be an easy victory, only to be shocked by Lü Yang's strength.

But soon, he showed a puzzled look.

Wu Changkong stared fixedly at Lü Yang, originally thinking he was a heavenly demon recorded in ancient texts, but now he could sense a life star on Lü Yang.

Even more absurd was the level of that life star.

" 【Villager】 ?"

For a moment, Wu Changkong felt it was utterly ridiculous.

The opponent clearly had the strength to "sweep through thousands of troops," just one step away from "unstoppable by ten thousand men," a true powerhouse even among Demonic Stars!

And yet, the life star was actually 【Villager】 ?

Despite that, Wu Changkong did not doubt Lü Yang's identity, because in his understanding, anyone with a life star could not be an extraterrestrial demon.

With this in mind, Wu Changkong quickly stepped forward, cupped his hands, and said, "Esteemed Immortal, it was a misunderstanding earlier. We are here to hunt an extraterrestrial demon. Since you have arrived first, you must have seen it already? May I ask where it fled to, so we can pursue and eliminate it?"

Lü Yang blinked upon hearing this, then revealed a look of realization:

"I fought that extraterrestrial demon, and she fled in that direction."

Lü Yang pointed without hesitation toward the direction where the True Person Miaoyin had fled.

"Thank you, Immortal!"

Wu Changkong cupped his hands again, then turned to issue orders.

The army, well-disciplined, swiftly pursued in the direction pointed by Lü Yang.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang watched their retreating figures.

"Interesting..."

He had started to understand the system of the 【Myriad Martial Realm】 .

This Heaven's Realm actually had no true cultivators; strictly speaking, they were all mortals.

The only difference was the life star.

"This life star is like another form of position, blessing mortals without extending their lifespan, and their external performance doesn't even reach the Foundation Establishment level."

However, it had a very nasty ability—suppression.

When enough life stars gathered and formed an array, the brilliant constellation could suppress the radiance of other life stars, its power so great that even lofty Foundation Establishment True Persons could fall to the mortal realm because of it!

"Higher life stars suppress lower ones."

"However, when enough lower-ranked life stars gather, they can obscure the brilliance of higher-ranked life stars, creating a subtle balance."

That said, there were exceptions.

"To form a suppression array, the minimum requirement is 【Warrior】 . If it's just 【Villager】 , they can't even form an array."

In other words, 【Villager】 was mere grass and dust.

Their only value was farming daily to feed 【Warriors】 and those with higher life stars.

They were the lowest of the low, yet also the most numerous.

A truly harsh pyramid structure.

However, Lü Yang saw an exploitable loophole.

After all, this was a Heaven's Realm with only one fruit position; its rules, though harsh, were not yet mature.

At least, from his perspective, there were still gaps to exploit.

"The biggest flaw is that the gap between life stars isn't absolute. At least, the difference between 【Villager】 and 【Warrior】 isn't as vast as heaven and earth."

After a moment of thought, Lü Yang swept his divine sense and soon spotted a group of refugees in the distance.

He immediately cast a spell and flew toward them in a streak of light.

These refugees were none other than the villagers of Luo Family Village.

The long line of people moved silently; everyone was walking in silence.

When people are starving, they don't speak.

Even the energy to complain was gone, or perhaps they had grown used to it.

Rather than complaining, they cared more about how to survive the next few days.

After all, once they left the village, they had no more fields to farm and couldn't hunt in the mountains.

Even if they had a bit of leftover grain, they dared not eat it recklessly.

They could only endure, taking tiny bites every day or simply eating tree bark to fill their stomachs.

After all, that was a strange trait inherent to 【Villager】 .

The burly man and the boy were naturally among them.

Because the man was a 【Warrior】 , even though he was retired, he was still better off than ordinary 【Villager】 and could spare a few pieces of dried food for the boy.

The boy was sensible, though still hungry, and didn't dare to eat it all at once.

"Gurururu..."

A muffled rumble came from the boy's stomach, making him blush and cover his belly.

After all, he had just finished practicing martial arts and needed a lot of nourishment.

Unfortunately, the burly man had no more food left.

"Hang in there," the man whispered.

"The situation at Tianzhu Mountain isn't something we can meddle in. With the beast tide approaching, staying in the village would be certain death."

"Once we reach the city, I'll figure something out."

"Master..."

At this moment, a fair hand suddenly reached out, holding two white candy beans, accompanied by a soft voice:

"Do you want to survive?"

The man and the boy were stunned and looked up, seeing a handsome young Daoist whose very appearance evoked a natural sense of goodwill.

However, the man quickly grew wary.

"Who are you?"

"You don't need to know my name."

Lü Yang shook his head, then smiled and said, "Aren't you all hungry? Use these to fill your stomachs. You won't feel hungry after eating them."

Only then did the man notice that the people around him had already received "candy beans" from Lü Yang.

After all, not everyone had leftover food.

Since 【Villager】 could eat anything, as long as it filled their bellies, they didn't care about taboos and eagerly grabbed the candy beans and gulped them down.

Then, something strange happened.

"I can eat dirt now?"

"Grass is edible too!"

"It smells so good!"

Anyone who ate the candy beans began to eat dirt, grass, or tree bark.

Yet none of them looked hungry anymore.

Originally, eating tree bark, grass, or dirt only provided the illusion of being full.

But now, the villagers looked vigorous, their bodies visibly growing stronger at a rate visible to the naked eye!

The man grew even more horrified.

"W-What kind of sorcery is this?"

"This isn't sorcery."

Lü Yang shook his head and revealed his life star.

The large 【Villager】 star immediately drew surprised gazes from everyone.

"We are all 【Villager】 , no different from each other."

With that, Lü Yang grinned widely.

"Come with me. I'll take you to eat your fill and create a world where no one has to go hungry again."

This time, he was really going to be a good person!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,375 words ]

## Chapter 258

The "sugar beans" fed to the villagers were actually very simple—they were the eggs of the Qi-Eating Insects.

This kind of cultivation method had once been simulated by Lü Yang in the Secret Realm of Method Refinement, and now he had merely perfected it again and applied it to the villagers.

“The marvel of the 【Villagers】 is that they can eat anything, but they can only eat and cannot truly digest what they consume. The eggs of the Qi-Eating Insects could make up for this flaw. They were never picky and could help the 【Villagers】 digest, further enhancing their vitality and physique.”

And after being transformed by the Qi-Eating Insects.

The villagers no longer had to go hungry. Even by eating soil and tree bark, they could strengthen their bodies to nearly the level of 【Martial Soldiers】 .

The only difference between them was the Life Star.

Under the suppression of the Life Star, even if more than a dozen 【Villagers】 attacked together, a 【Martial Soldier】 could frighten them into submission with a single surge of energy and spirit.

However, that was all there was to it.

When the number of 【Villagers】 increased to dozens, the suppression of the 【Martial Soldiers】 was no longer absolute. The advantage in numbers overwhelmed the advantage in quality.

Thus, Lü Yang taught the villagers the Qi-Gathering Method.

“The Qi-Gathering Secret of the 《Primordial Heaven’s Unified Control of the Myriad Heavens Divine Method》 was specifically designed to gather the Qi of the 【Myriad Martial World】 , and the Life Star was naturally included among them.”

Of course, the Qi-Gathering Method itself was too profound for the villagers to comprehend, so Lü Yang, using his astonishing wisdom and with the help of Master Youyin, simplified it to the extreme. He removed all the complicated parts and unnecessary functions, retaining only the “Qi-Eating” portion.

In this way, the villagers could use the Qi-Gathering Method to absorb the Qi of the Life Stars.

“Kill a 【Martial Soldier】 , then gather their Qi, and you’ll become the next 【Martial Soldier】 ! Or are you planning to be slaughtered forever?”

Almost all the villagers' eyes turned red, and the big man among the crowd stared at Lü Yang, who was addressing the crowd confidently, with a horrified expression.

Rationally, he naturally didn’t want to agree with Lü Yang.

However, at that moment, he remembered his own ambition—his unwillingness to accept the fate of a 【Martial Soldier】 and his efforts to rise, only to be seriously injured and forced into retirement.

What if he joined them too?

No need to earn merits, no need to please superiors, no need to offer bribes—just kill a higher-ranked 【Martial General】 to obtain their Life Star.

His eyes gradually turned red.

What happened next was very simple.

When the lords of the Pioneer City set up porridge stalls, ready to show some charity and, by the way, select a few servants from the villagers like picking livestock.

They were instead greeted by a swarm of locusts.

And at this very moment, all the Pioneer City’s garrison had been redeployed by City Lord Wu Changkong to hunt the Extraterritorial Demons, leaving the city unprecedentedly empty.

“Kill! Kill! Yes, just like that, this is who you really are!”

“Come on, let me make your slaughter even more satisfying!”

Lü Yang directly scattered the Qi-Eating Insect eggs. Not only the 【Villagers】 —there were plenty of low-tier Life Stars in this world, even more abundant than the insect eggs.

The chaos began to spread rapidly.

Immediately after, Lü Yang started spreading the Qi-Eating Insect eggs and the Qi-Gathering Method in the borderlands of the 【Myriad Martial World】 , igniting one rebellion after another.

And naturally, as the instigator of the chaos, Lü Yang received no punishment at all.

After all, from start to finish, it was the natives of the 【Myriad Martial World】 who were gathering Qi, and their gathering of Qi was merely transferring from one hand to the other as far as this world's heavens were concerned.

Moreover, the 【Myriad Martial World】 still coveted the Earth Vein Qi in Lü Yang's possession. So as long as Lü Yang didn't gather the Qi personally and occasionally offered some Earth Vein Qi to this world's heavens, they were more than happy to turn a blind eye to Lü Yang's actions.

Under these circumstances, Lü Yang's forces immediately began to grow stronger.

When the most numerous 【Villagers】 were stirred up, their numbers increased no longer by ten thousand or twenty thousand, but by true exponential growth.

One hundred thousand, two hundred thousand, four hundred thousand, eight hundred thousand, one million six hundred thousand!

And with the Qi-Eating Insect eggs in hand, allowing people to survive on dirt and grass without going hungry, Lü Yang naturally became the leader of the masses.

It was only at this point that someone finally noticed something was wrong.

However, even so, the decayed and backward feudal system still failed to realize the danger of the 【Villagers】 in time and merely sent people casually to suppress them.

And it turned into nothing more than a war of attrition.

Lü Yang didn't even need to act. The villagers alone easily wiped out the troops sent to suppress them, seizing their Life Stars and equipment as their own.

In just a few short months, the momentum had become unstoppable.

Meanwhile, deep in the mountains, True Person Miaoyin, who had escaped early on, had just awakened from her seclusion, a hint of satisfaction on her face.

“Success!”

“Although there are still some troubles, the forged 【Life Star】 can already deceive most people, allowing me to infiltrate the inner workings of this world.”

True Person Miaoyin also had a plan for the 【Myriad Martial World】. Although their military formations were formidable, and once they reached the scale of ‘ten thousand troops’, even she would be in great danger, she had no intention of confronting them head-on. She only needed to assassinate a few leaders.

Her plan was very simple.

First, disguise herself as a local, then find a way to assassinate those blessed with demonic stars, and gather their Qi. Although risky, the rewards were the greatest.

However, when she emerged from seclusion, she found that something seemed off.

The city she had previously chosen had already turned into scorched earth, blood flowing like rivers, with the city lord’s head hanging at the gate.

What had happened?

True Person Miaoyin immediately began divining the heavenly secrets, but Lü Yang had used the 【Ultimate Heavenly Instrument】 to obscure cause and effect, and with her level of cultivation, she couldn’t deduce the past or the future.

However, some things were clear even without divination.

“It must be related to Lü Yang!”

Although she didn’t know how Lü Yang had done it, causing such a huge upheaval in just a few months still made True Person Miaoyin feel a little uneasy.

“There’s no time to waste... I must quickly summon Suo Huan.”

Thinking of this, True Person Miaoyin no longer dared to linger on gathering Qi. She immediately returned to her seclusion site, began setting up an array, and took out a glazed treasure mirror.

This treasure mirror was called the 【Void Heaven Mirror】, a superior spirit treasure.

Previously, she had been using it to communicate and trade with Suo Huan. The mirror had only one marvelous ability—long-distance communication and the transmission of items.

With the aid of the array, it could even transmit people.

Soon, as the array was laid out, the mirror began to glow, and Suo Huan's figure appeared on the mirror's surface, still wearing his usual amiable smile.

The next second, Suo Huan chuckled and said, "Is Fellow Daoist ready?"

"As long as you are willing to sign the contract."

True Person Miaoyin said in a deep voice, "I will help you slay Lü Yang, and you will help me overcome my tribulation. No betrayal. Once the contract is sealed, I will immediately summon you."

"Of course."

Suo Huan nodded without hesitation, took the contract sent by True Person Miaoyin, and left his mark of spiritual power. Seeing this, True Person Miaoyin finally revealed a satisfied smile.

Immediately after, True Person Miaoyin activated her hand seals. As the light on the treasure mirror grew stronger and stronger, Suo Huan's figure became clearer and clearer until, with a sudden flicker of light, he took a bold step forward and actually crossed the boundary of worlds, stepping out from the mirror!

Seeing this, True Person Miaoyin twisted her waist and stepped forward to greet him, "Fellow Daoist Suo Huan..."

Before she could finish speaking—

"Finally fell for it."

In an instant, as Suo Huan appeared, an invisible wave suddenly...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,540 words ]

## Chapter 259: The Hardship of Seeking Gold

Inside the secret chamber, True Person Suo Huan's robes fluttered, and his amiable smile resembled a mask affixed to his face, remaining unchanged even during action.

"Thank you, fellow Daoist."

Looking at True Person Miaoyin, Suo Huan's mind flashed back to his meeting with the "True Lord of Colorful Brocade" overseas, a trace of undeniable gloom crossing his face.

'Negotiating with a tiger for its skin... there's no other way!'

'After all, I am an outsider cultivator, without a True Lord as backing; to seek gold, I must obtain the tacit approval of various True Lords to have even a sliver of hope.'

'From this perspective, I must thank Chong Guang. If he hadn't exposed that late-stage Golden Core True Lord, I fear I wouldn't have found even the slightest opportunity until death. Now, at least the True Lords of the Sacred Sect permit me to verify the "Long Flowing Water," even willing to personally refine a Stabilizing Sea Pearl for me.'

Thinking of this, no trace of joy appeared on Suo Huan's face.

As an outsider cultivator, seeking gold was undoubtedly several times more difficult than for Chong Guang, requiring at least three conditions to have a slim chance.

First was the ritual to attract the fruit position.

"Long Flowing Water" signifies endlessness and ceaseless flow; using the "Stabilizing Sea Pearl" to embody its meaning should attract the gaze of the fruit position.'

This was the first condition.

Secondly, his "Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land" was not yet complete; it must be fully perfected through Qi collection to meet the minimum standard for transforming into a cave heaven.

Lastly, the status.

"My current strength, strictly speaking, is only that of a Great True Person, comparable to the late Foundation Establishment stage, yet not reaching the peak of Foundation Establishment—this is my innate flaw!"

Suo Huan felt bitter in his heart; although the realm he came from wasn't small, it had only condensed a prototype of the fruit position, strictly speaking, even inferior to the current "Ten Thousand Martial Realm." Otherwise, it wouldn't have become a battleground for the struggle for the Dao, and as a cultivator from that realm, his cultivation was inherently lacking.

The strongest was only the late Foundation Establishment stage!

Unless he reincarnated and cultivated anew, he could never reach the peak of Foundation Establishment in this life, let alone refine the gold nature—what could he use to support the blessed land?

Three difficult hurdles, each harder than the last.

'But my lifespan is also nearing its end; everyone from the "Huanxu Realm" is dead! Only I remain—if I die too, the "Huanxu Realm" will truly be extinct!'

Thinking of this, Suo Huan's previously hesitant gaze immediately became resolute; he had nothing to lose, after all, if he didn't break through to the Golden Core, he would die; if he did, there was a chance to survive—what was there to fear? Without any backing, if he didn't fight, what path remained?

With this in mind, Suo Huan immediately began arrangements.

True Person Miaoyin's "Void Heaven Mirror" was directly borrowed by him, and the formation was casually modified; soon, the mirror's surface once again displayed a brilliant light.

"Amitabha."

Within the radiant light appeared a bald-headed figure—a benevolent old monk. Upon seeing this, Suo Huan skillfully bent down and respectfully saluted.

"This humble one greets the Supreme One of Great Strength."

The old monk was also a Great True Person of the Pure Land, named "Great Strength," one of the most hopeful to ascend to the Bodhisattva position within the Pure Land.

As soon as the Supreme One of Great Strength appeared, he looked directly at Suo Huan: "Has the benefactor made up his mind?"

"I have."

Suo Huan decisively said, "This humble one wishes to verify the 'Long Flowing Water.' If I can ascend to the position of True Lord in the future, I am willing to merge the cave heaven and fruit position into the Pure Land!"

There was no way to forcibly seize the fruit position.

Suo Huan was well aware of this; after all, an ordinary realm having one fruit position was already remarkable, yet this broken place had thirty!

What's the point of playing anymore?

Moreover, there was a Nascent Soul Dao Master above; Suo Huan couldn't comprehend that realm, only knowing that if he forcibly seized the fruit position, he would be killed immediately.

Therefore, Suo Huan had long planned for this.

'Seizing the fruit position is merely to revive the "Huanxu Realm" within my cave heaven; afterward, I can return it, and merging into the Pure Land is a good choice.'

'As for the drawbacks of cultivating in the Pure Land, at the Bodhisattva level, there is still some autonomy; for someone like me, it's not much trouble. As long as I can seek gold and ascend, future troubles can be dealt with later. If I can't even seek gold, worrying about the future is meaningless!'

Thinking of this, Suo Huan continued to bow:

"I earnestly request the master to act, to have the Bodhisattva establish a temple within this humble one's 'Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land,' to bless it with great Buddhist power, aiding in its swift completion."

He was voluntarily giving others leverage.

Allowing the Pure Land to leave a mark within the "Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land" so that the Pure Land could trust him, helping to perfect the blessed land without worrying about him reneging.

As expected, the Supreme One of Great Strength showed a satisfied expression upon hearing this:

"Buddha means enlightenment."

"The benefactor has an enlightened heart and will surely become a Buddha."

After speaking, the Supreme One of Great Strength took out a thick scripture, with seven golden characters on the cover: "The Fundamental Sutra of Mahayana True Enlightenment"!

"This sutra was personally transcribed by the Bodhisattva with great power; each word is a gem, blessed by the fruit position. The benefactor only needs to send this sutra into the blessed land and consume it through the Qi collection method; the blessed land will naturally be perfected. However, I wonder how the benefactor plans to seek gold? Perhaps we can assist you."

"That won't trouble the master."

Suo Huan shook his head; the method of seeking gold involved his very foundation, and he naturally couldn't reveal it, lest someone exploit a weakness.

Seeing this, the Supreme One of Great Strength didn't inquire further, merely chanting a Buddhist verse.

Soon, the radiant light faded.

However, Suo Huan didn't stop; instead, he switched the formation's patterns, and after a moment, the precious mirror lit up again, this time displaying another figure.

This person wore official robes, draped in a bright red cloak, and donned a crown, clearly dressed as a Dao Court official, appearing solemn and dignified. Above his head, the radiant light intertwined with tadpole-like talismanic script, finally forming the title "Minister of Military Affairs of the Capital," making him appear even more mystical.

"This humble one greets the Minister."

Suo Huan bowed again, even switching to the official Dao Court etiquette, his movements practiced.

The so-called "Minister of Military Affairs of the Capital" was a second-rank official position in the Dao Court, also a Great True Person; strictly speaking, his strength was even inferior to Suo Huan's.

However, at this moment, as Suo Huan bowed, neither party felt anything amiss.

The "Minister" looked indifferent, smiling: "Contacting me proactively—seems you've finally come around and are willing to join our dynasty?"

"I've come around."

Suo Huan said without hesitation: "I only ask His Majesty to bestow upon me a first-rank title to aid in my quest for gold. After success, I am willing to guard the border seas for the Dao Court forever!"

"Good, good, good."

Upon hearing this, the "Minister of Military Affairs of the Capital" immediately showed a satisfied expression: "Since you're sincere, I will present your request to His Majesty."

"Thank you, Minister."

Suo Huan bowed again, then skillfully took out a storage pouch and transmitted it through the "Void Heaven Mirror": "This contains spiritual materials I obtained overseas.

This humble one lacks the discernment to judge their quality; I ask the Minister to evaluate them for me, as a favor."

"You, you—don't do this next time!"

The "Minister of Military Affairs of the Capital" laughed heartily, openly accepting the storage pouch, then disconnected from the precious mirror, the radiant light gradually dissipating.

After completing all this, Suo Huan finally straightened up.

He stood tall, as if to straighten the waist he had bent during the previous bows, a trace of genuine joy finally appearing in his eyes.

This was true delight.

For him, wearing a smile had long become a habit, not representing his true emotions; only the thoughts in his eyes reflected his genuine feelings.

'There's hope...!'

"Long Flowing Water" made the Pure Land, Dao Court, and Sacred Sect no longer oppose his quest for gold, also giving him the opportunity to negotiate benefits from all three.

'The Sacred Sect provides the Stabilizing Sea Pearl, embodying the "Long Flowing Water"; the Pure Land helps perfect the blessed land, making it complete; the Dao Court bestows an official title, allowing me to compensate for innate deficiencies and achieve peak Foundation Establishment cultivation—in this way, I finally have a slim hope of seeking gold!'

Thinking of this, Suo Huan could hardly suppress his joy.

For this, he even borrowed True Person Miaoyin's assistance to come to the "Ten Thousand Martial Realm," an outer realm, ensuring that the karma of his three-way negotiation wouldn't be calculated.

At this point, the only flaw...

Thinking of this, Suo Huan finally turned his head to look at...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 260: Lu Yang's Unscrupulous Tactics

[ 1,767 words ]

Gazing at Miao Yin Perfected, Suo Huan's face showed a thoughtful expression, then with a shift of his thoughts, he withdrew his "Heaven and Earth Lockdown", allowing Miao Yin Perfected to regain her freedom.

"Suo Huan! What exactly are you trying to do? ! "

The moment she recovered, Miao Yin Perfected instinctively widened the distance between herself and Suo Huan, gazing at him with vigilance, yet also brimming with confidence: "You can't kill me! "

Suo Huan and she had signed a Dharma Pact, preventing them from harming each other. To obtain such a Dharma Pact, she had expended no small amount of effort, and its binding force was exceptionally strong. She was confident Suo Huan could not break free. If he were to truly attempt to kill her, his magical power would surely backfire upon him, dragging him down to the grave with her!

"Fellow Daoist, you misunderstand. "

Seeing this, Suo Huan's smile was gentle and amiable, as he softly said: "How could I be the kind of person who slaughters indiscriminately? It's just that there are some matters I need to borrow Fellow Daoist's hand for, I truly apologize for the inconvenience. "

As he spoke, Suo Huan's gaze grew increasingly cold and sinister.

Miao Yin Perfected looked bewildered. Suo Huan had just met with individuals from the Pure Land and the Court, but he had clouded her divine sense, preventing her from knowing.

But who could know for sure?

After all, Miao Yin Perfected had been present. Although Suo Huan had sealed her divine sense, how could one be sure she hadn't secretly overheard the specific details through other means?

'Better to eliminate her altogether. '

Thoughts churned in Suo Huan's mind. Although he already harbored killing intent, the expression on his face grew even more gentle, even revealing a hint of sincere apology:

"Let's return to the main topic, Fellow Daoist, didn't you want me to assist you in overcoming your tribulation? "

". You're still willing to help me? "

Miao Yin Perfected was utterly bewildered by Suo Huan's actions. Why did he immediately move against her the moment she emerged, only to then voluntarily offer to help her?

"Of course, I am. "

Suo Huan nodded earnestly, deliberately displaying a hint of ambiguous charm: "After all, Fellow Daoist possesses such peerless beauty, I, too, find myself deeply captivated. "

'Oh! So he's lusting after my body! '

Miao Yin Perfected immediately found Suo Huan's reaction to be logical. She had always been quite confident in her own beauty, and a faint smile appeared on her face:

"To tell you the truth, Fellow Daoist Suo Huan's cultivation is profound, and this one also holds him in great admiration. In the future, I would be willing to discuss the Dao with Fellow Daoist. "

Upon hearing this, Suo Huan revealed a triumphant expression, while lowering his eyelids, concealing the coldness in his eyes:

'Stupid woman! '

'Although I cannot kill her, I actually don't need to lift a finger. I only need to let go and do nothing, and this woman will surely die by the hand of that Yuan Tu from the Saint Sect! '

Suo Huan had thoroughly researched Lu Yang.

In his view, this Perfected Yuan Tu, besides his unparalleled talent, also possessed exceptional methods. At the very least, he was absolutely not someone Miao Yin Perfected could handle.

Miao Yin Perfected herself actually understood this point, which was why she had sought out Suo Huan as external aid. However, she didn't know that Suo Huan was merely using her. At present, he had no intention whatsoever of getting involved in this messy affair; after all, he still needed to leverage the Saint Sect's influence, so how could he genuinely kill a prodigy of the Saint Sect?

Thinking of this, Suo Huan immediately chuckled:

"Without further ado, Madame, quickly contact the other party. Summon that Yuan Tu, and I will slay him as quickly as possible, so I can have more time to discuss the Dao with Madame. "

"Don't be in such a hurry~ The [Illusory Heaven Mirror] is still in Fellow Daoist's hands, isn't it? Shouldn't it be returned to its rightful owner? "

Miao Yin Perfected's eyes flickered, as she stared intently at Suo Huan. Seeing that Suo Huan wasn't playing any tricks, and honestly returned the precious mirror, only then did she feel at ease.

Immediately after, she began to set up a formation.

Soon, the precious mirror glowed with brilliant light, and a deep, dark quiet room gradually emerged on its surface. Within the shadows, a tall, upright figure was strikingly seated.

"Fellow Daoist Yuan Tu. "

Miao Yin Perfected called out softly, once again adopting the delicate, fragile demeanor she had shown Lu Yang before: "Where are you now? Have you escaped the Myriad Martial Realm's pursuit? "

"Thank you for your concern, Madame. "

Lu Yang opened his eyes, and smiled calmly: "I am already unharmed. "

"Oh? "

Upon hearing this, Miao Yin Perfected actually showed a hint of surprise. She was able to conceal herself because she was relatively familiar with the [Myriad Martial Realm], which was how she managed to conceal herself.

Yet Lu Yang, despite being here for the first time, not only avoided the killing intent of the [Myriad Martial Realm], but judging from the situations she encountered after emerging from seclusion, he must have stirred up quite a storm within the [Myriad Martial Realm]. With such methods and abilities, Miao Yin Perfected could now understand why Chong Guang valued him so highly.

'What a pity, but for the sake of my Daoist Realm, this person must still die! '

Thinking of this, a seductive smile appeared on Miao Yin Perfected's face, as she softly said: "Since you, Yuan Tu, are also unharmed, why don't we rendezvous? With two of us working together, the efficiency of Qi collection will also be higher. "

Miao Yin Perfected felt her reasoning was perfectly sound.

They had separated before due to the killing intent pervading Heaven and Earth, fearing they would drag each other down. Now, they would reunite because both parties possessed means of concealment, and their combined efficiency would be greater.

Indeed, Lu Yang's expression also showed a hint of excitement upon hearing this: "Really? "

Immediately after, Lu Yang spoke word by word, saying very earnestly: "I can't seem to find where you are, Madame. How about you give me your location instead? "

"Alright, alright. "

Miao Yin Perfected hastily nodded, etching her location with her divine sense, and then sending it over with the [Illusory Heaven Mirror]: "I will await Fellow Daoist here. "

". . . Don't worry, I will surely arrive within three days. "

As his words faded, the precious mirror's brilliant light extinguished.

Only then did Miao Yin Perfected turn to look at Suo Huan beside her, and smiled, saying: "Everything is ready. Fellow Daoist, would you like to set up another sealing formation here? "

Upon hearing this, Suo Huan cast a deep glance at Miao Yin Perfected, then shook his head, and remained silent.

He had nothing to say to a dead person.

Indeed, in Suo Huan's eyes, Miao Yin Perfected was already a dead woman. Although he didn't know what methods Lu Yang would employ, his reaction was clearly off.

'If a Saint Sect Perfected One sincerely intended to cooperate, this would absolutely not be their reaction. Specifically giving an address, and then one party waiting for the other? Aren't they afraid of an ambush? It's understandable if that foolish woman Miao Yin doesn't get it, but how could someone as renowned as Lu Yang not understand? Chances are, he has other plans! '

Thinking of this, he glanced at Miao Yin Perfected again.

'This woman's luck is too good. She previously became Chong Guang's Dao Companion, and didn't need to use schemes for many things. As a result, the moment Chong Guang left, her true nature was revealed instead. '

Meanwhile, within the city closest to the mountain forest where Suo Huan and Miao Yin Perfected were located.

Inside the City Lord's Estate, Lu Yang descended, riding a ray of flight-light, and looked at the devout-faced large man beside him, who was none other than the retired [Martial Soldier] from the earlier village.

However, he was no longer a [Martial Soldier].

He was now filled with vigor and spirit, his entire body bulging with muscles, and his surging vital essence transformed into a rainbow light, soaring straight into the heavens, interweaving and shining with a destiny star in the boundless sky.

[Grand Commander of Troops]

This was his new destiny star, obtained by slaying his former corrupt superior who had accepted his bribes but failed to act. He was now completely transformed.

As for Lu Yang, who had changed all of this, his reverence was self-evident.

Thus, the moment Lu Yang appeared, the large man immediately, knelt down in prostration as if a golden mountain had toppled and a jade pillar had fallen, and declared loudly: "Chen Anmin greets the Immortal Master! "

"Rise, there's no need to kneel. "

"Have the troops already assembled? "

Lu Yang waved his hand. The reason he had spread the Qi-devouring insect eggs and Qi-gathering techniques, expending so much effort and energy to create such a grand spectacle, was precisely for this very moment.

The large man hastily replied upon hearing this: "Reporting to Immortal Master, they are all on their way. A total of thirty thousand people, they are all the elite forces of the current rebel army. They were the ones who had benefited the most from the earlier efforts, and their destiny stars are uniformly [Military Elites], and they have all replaced their equipment with armor, swords, and spears captured from the official army. "

"Only thirty thousand people? " Lu Yang's brow furrowed slightly.

"There are more to follow. Although they are not as elite as this force, and their equipment isn't as good, they are all [Martial Soldiers], numbering over a hundred thousand, and are currently arriving in batches. "

"Hmm, well done. "

Lu Yang nodded, then took out a map, compared it with the location Miao Yin Perfected had sent him, and drew a circle around that area with his brush.

"Issue my command, for the entire army to attack. "

Even Suo Huan hadn't expected Lu Yang to be so unscrupulous, directly joining the side of the [Myriad Martial Realm], becoming a guide to slay Miao Yin Perfected!

(End of Chapter)

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,512 words ]

The sun had already set in the west.

By the time Miaoyin realized something was wrong, the distant sun had completely disappeared.

The starry sky spread out above her head.

"...Fellow Daoist Suo Huan?"

Miaoyin turned to look at Suo Huan beside her, only to find that he had somehow already begun setting up a formation.

One after another, formation patterns were laid out by him.

What was he doing?

Before Miaoyin True Person could react, she saw a signal flare shoot up into the sky in the distance.

It exploded into a brilliant firework, accompanied by shouting.

"Found them!"

"We've found them!"

The waves of shouting sounded like an invisible tidal wave, surging with unstoppable momentum without the slightest attempt to conceal themselves.

At the same time, the starry sky above her suddenly burst with dazzling light.

In the next second, Miaoyin True Person felt the ground trembling slightly.

She instinctively wanted to take flight and escape with her escape light.

However, at that moment, rainbow lights of blood and qi shot up into the sky all around her, linking with the starry sky.

In an instant, an invisible pressure descended, forcibly extinguishing her escape light!

“No! We’re surrounded!”

Miaoyin True Person’s pupils shrank sharply as she finally understood everything.

“Yuan Tu... he actually plans to kill me? He lured all these people here?”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Very quickly, the slight trembling of the ground turned into violent thunder.

Miaoyin True Person could no longer float in the air.

She had to leap onto a tall tree and look into the distance.

She saw the distant horizon gradually turn black.

Then, it quickly solidified into a black tide, rolling toward her like a sky-covering wave!

This was the first time Miaoyin True Person felt shocked by the sheer number of people.

Thinking of this, she immediately turned to look at Suo Huan.

However, she saw that he had already finished setting up the formation and was now standing inside the radiant array.

“This is... a teleportation array?”

Miaoyin True Person immediately showed a look of joy.

She hurriedly brushed aside the hair on her forehead, her beautiful eyes sparkling as she quickly walked toward Suo Huan.

“Fellow Daoist, you truly planned ahead...”

Yet what responded to her was Suo Huan’s cold gaze.

“Goodbye.”

In the next moment, the radiant light vanished.

Suo Huan's figure disappeared instantly.

The formation, having lost the support of a True Person's position, lost its brilliance as well.

Miaoyin True Person's smile froze completely on her pretty face.

When she looked around again, an unprecedented sense of fear surged in her heart.

This was a feeling she had not experienced since becoming Chong Guang's Dao Companion.

It made her clench her silver teeth uncontrollably.

'If only Chong Guang were still here...'

At this thought, her resentment toward Chong Guang rose another level.

But she quickly pushed aside these distracting thoughts and started surveying the surroundings.

"Fortunately, I chose to seclude myself in the mountains."

Although she hadn't expected such a large-scale operation, Miaoyin True Person had considered the possibility of being discovered and besieged by the army of the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 .

So she had deliberately chosen the mountainous region.

This type of terrain, with its dense forests, was very suitable for guerrilla tactics.

Alone in this environment, it wouldn't be difficult for her to break through the army's encirclement.

However, she soon noticed something strange.

Because as these troops advanced step by step, they were devouring everything around them—tree bark, grass roots, even the soil itself.

In front of them was a dense mountain forest.

Behind them was an empty wasteland.

Even with Miaoyin True Person's vast experience, she was stunned by the sight.

This was not human behavior!

It was as if a horde of humanoid locusts was wantonly destroying everything!

“Lu Yang... how did he do this?”

Miaoyin True Person had no time to think.

The army had already surrounded her.

The soldiers at the front could already see her presence.

“There she is!”

“That’s the Outer Demon! The Immortal Master has ordered us to slay the Outer Demon!”

“Kill! Kill!”

With earth-shaking roars, the crazed soldiers began their charge.

A massive force of life star power crashed down on Miaoyin True Person.

Under such terrifying suppression, Miaoyin True Person, who was at the peak of the Foundation Establishment stage, found her cultivation base plummeting.

In the end, she even fell from the rank of a True Person of Foundation Establishment, retaining only her Qi that far exceeded the peak of Qi Refining.

She was left to face tens of thousands of fierce soldiers all on her own!

“What a joke...”

Miaoyin True Person gritted her teeth and immediately performed a divine ability.

Her mana, like a taut string, stirred up a wave of killing sound.

In an instant, she shredded the soldiers charging at the front.

“Do you really think I’m afraid of you?”

Miaoyin True Person’s ten fingers flicked continuously.

Vast mana swept out like a tidal wave.

In an instant, blood blossoms bloomed among the charging crowd.

However, this was meaningless.

Because she had only killed a few hundred or a thousand soldiers at the front.

Yet a tenth of her mana had already been depleted, forcing her to stop.

What made it worse was that they were in the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 , where the spiritual energy was poisonous and repelled outsiders.

Unless she could restore her Foundation Establishment cultivation, she couldn't even absorb the spiritual energy to replenish her mana.

Like water without a source, she could only watch helplessly as the tidal wave of soldiers surged toward her, ready to swallow her whole!

“This can't go on!”

“Where is Lu Yang?”

Miaoyin True Person looked around.

The suppression of the life star did not differentiate between friend and foe.

Since she had been suppressed to such a miserable state, she did not believe that Lu Yang could remain unharmed!

Meanwhile, several kilometers away on a mountain cliff.

Lu Yang sat calmly in a tea pavilion, brewing tea.

Surrounded by over a hundred 【Personal Guards】 , he watched the developments on the battlefield from afar.

“Have An Min push the eighth squad forward by three meters.”

“Yes.”

Lu Yang's orders were quickly relayed.

Under his command, the somewhat disorganized military formation, which had been disrupted by Miaoyin True Person's onslaught, quickly regained its orderly structure.

Under their encirclement, Miaoyin True Person no longer resembled the noble lady she once was.

With disheveled hair and bloodstained palace robes, she looked on in disbelief at the still-approaching soldiers.

She could not understand these madmen.

By her experience, they should have been frightened by now!

She had already killed nearly ten thousand people!

Normally, any army, no matter how large, would have collapsed after losing ten thousand soldiers like this.

She could have escaped amid the chaos and carved a path to survival.

But these soldiers were different.

Their eyes were bloodshot.

Not only were they unmoved by their comrades' deaths, but they seemed even more frenzied, continuing to charge forward without hesitation.

Soon, another half-hour passed.

The ground was once again covered in mountains of corpses and seas of blood.

Miaoyin True Person stood amidst it all, having used every spiritual treasure and divine ability at her disposal.

'How many have I killed?'

Even Miaoyin True Person felt dazed.

In the past, she might have been overjoyed, because those besieging her were all martial cultivators bearing life stars.

By killing them and using the Qi harvesting technique, she could have plundered the Qi of the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 .

However, now she didn't even have the spare strength to perform the Qi harvesting technique.

She felt dizzy, her mana nearly depleted.

But when she looked up, all she could see was an endless sea of people.

"The 【Martial Soldiers】 are in position."

Most of the thirty thousand 【Elite Soldiers】 had been slain by Miaoyin True Person.

Yet at this moment, over a hundred thousand 【Martial Soldiers】 had already filled the gap.

Seeing this, a look of clear despair finally appeared on Miaoyin True Person's face.

“Lu Yang! I know it's you!”

“Where are you?”

“Come out here!”

Miaoyin True Person finally couldn't hold back and shouted loudly.

What frustrated her the most was undoubtedly this.

From beginning to end, she hadn't even seen Lu Yang once!

She completely couldn't understand why Lu Yang had suddenly decided to kill her.

Moreover, he had mobilized such a massive operation, clearly having planned it long ago.

If her plan had been exposed, it didn't make sense.

She was very confident in concealing the cause and effect.

There was absolutely no way Lu Yang could have calculated the reason.

So no matter how she thought about it, she couldn't figure it out.

However, how could Lu Yang show himself?

What if Miaoyin True Person still had some hidden means?

If he revealed himself rashly, wouldn't that give her a chance to turn the tables?

Therefore, Miaoyin True Person's shouting was destined to receive no response.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 262 : "Do You Really Think You Can Seduce Me with Your Looks?"

[ 1,291 words ]

Chapter 262: "Do You Really Think You Can Seduce Me with Your Looks?"

Another half an hour passed.

Miaoyin True Person finally exhausted all her power.

She still wanted to fight with her physical body, but in the end, a group of burly men pinned her down, leaving her completely powerless to resist.

"I"

Puchi! Puchi! Puchi!

Without any mercy, long blades pierced through her delicate body one after another, draining her blood and exhausting her strength, leaving her unable to struggle any longer.

Immediately after, several burly men stepped forward, took out ropes, and tied her up tightly.

The rope was folded in half, looped around her neck, threaded through the valley between her breasts and collarbones, binding her hands and feet behind her back, wrapping around her lower body like a thick turtle shell, ensuring she could not move at all.

"Ugh—" Miaoyin True Person let out a painful groan.

After finishing all this, the remaining soldiers lifted Miaoyin True Person and brought her to the cliff where Lü Yang was, then threw her heavily to the ground.

"Immortal Master, the Outer Heavenly Demon has been captured!"

The 【Disaster Victims】 who had consumed the Devouring Qi Worm Eggs and defied fate stood respectfully, their eyes fixed on Lü Yang.

Lü Yang stepped out of the tea pavilion and looked at Miaoyin True Person.

"Yuan Tu... is there some kind of misunderstanding here?"

Miaoyin True Person forced a smile, but in her current disheveled and blood-stained state, even the most beautiful smile looked utterly hideous.

"No misunderstanding."

Lü Yang remained calm as he walked up to Miaoyin True Person.

"Since you wanted to kill me, isn't it normal for me to strike back?"

"When did I ever want to kill you?"

Miaoyin True Person naturally refused to admit it and immediately shook her head.

"There must be some misunderstanding here. If you don't believe me, you can harvest me. I know you know how."

"Once you've harvested me, you'll know whether I'm telling the truth or not."

Miaoyin True Person spoke softly.

She did not mind being harvested, as long as it meant she could survive.

Moreover, she had a secret technique that could allow her to turn the tables during the harvesting process.

Hearing this, Lü Yang also stood up.

However, just when Miaoyin True Person thought he was about to harvest her, Lü Yang directly drew his sword and with one slash, severed her beautiful head.

"Do you really think you can seduce me with your looks?"

From the very beginning, Lü Yang never intended to harvest Miaoyin True Person.

Otherwise, given his nature of not liking to waste anything, he would have already had people lining up outside.

Although he could have harvested her, there was no need to.

After all, Miaoyin True Person had nothing that tempted him.

He did not lust for women.

It was better to kill her early to avoid future troubles.

'As expected, I'm still a good person deep down.'

Lü Yang sighed emotionally, then looked up at the sky with a hint of disappointment in his eyes.

Because his 【Villager】 life star did not show any changes.

'As expected, it's not that simple. No matter how foolish they are, they couldn't possibly pass the supreme position of Sun and Moon Heavenly Emperor to me just because I killed Miaoyin.'

'Does this mean I've been played for nothing? The heavens won't acknowledge it?'

'If that's the case, don't blame me for turning hostile.'

While Lü Yang was thinking this.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, 【Commanding General】 Chen Anmin beside him froze.

Then, a dazzling corona-like radiance suddenly burst out from his body.

In the next moment, his life star began to change.

High in the sky, Chen Anmin's life star transformed into a fireball.

It rapidly expanded, eventually turning into a blazing, blinding sun!

【Bright Heavenly Emperor】

A life star of the sun, the supreme position of the world!

At this moment, Lü Yang, who was standing so close, felt it the clearest.

He felt that all his mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivation instantly dissipated!

At this moment, he was no different from the earlier Miaoyin True Person.

All his status and power were suppressed to almost nothing.

He was left with only powerless Qi like rootless water.

This was the suppression brought by the 【Bright Heavenly Emperor】 .

Only late-stage Foundation Establishment True Masters might retain a portion of their strength in front of such a presence!

"Im... Immortal Master?"

Chen Anmin looked at Lü Yang in astonishment.

He found that the Immortal Master, whom he had always considered unfathomably powerful, now looked no different from an ordinary mortal.

It didn't seem all that impressive?

While Chen Anmin was still dazed, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes and thought to himself.

'What a move to cut off my support, not giving it to me, but to someone beside me?'

'Is this a declaration of hostility?'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's lips curled into a cold smile.

But just then, Chen Anmin suddenly came back to his senses.

He suddenly turned his head to the sky and shouted sharply, "Who's there! Show yourself!"

A shout that should have belonged to a mere mortal, under the blessing of the 【Bright Heavenly Emperor】 , transformed into a thunderous roar like that of a tiger or dragon.

All the soldiers in the area fell to their knees.

At the same time, an invisible layer of power was torn apart by the sound, like lifting a curtain to reveal the figure hidden behind it.

"Impressive. Fellow Daoist truly lives up to your reputation."

Lü Yang squinted his eyes as he looked toward the figure.

He saw a young man with a scholarly appearance, always wearing a somewhat fake, kindly smile.

The [latest novel updates are first posted on 69 Book Forum!](#)

But what mattered more was his cultivation.

For a moment, Lü Yang felt his heart skip a beat.

'Late-stage Foundation Establishment!?'

To still possess the power of flight and evasion under the suppression of the 【Bright Heavenly Emperor】 , based on Lü Yang's previous deductions, the person must be at least at the late-stage Foundation Establishment level.

'Fortunately, I was cautious and prepared to use full strength like a lion hunting a rabbit.'

'I gathered all the troops I could mobilize.'

'Otherwise, facing a late-stage True Master without an army of over a hundred thousand connecting to the life star to provide suppression, victory wouldn't be guaranteed.'

'I might even be counter-killed on the battlefield!'

"Greetings, Fellow Daoist Yuan Tu."

The man called Suo Huan remained calm and cupped his hands toward Lü Yang.

"Your clone is truly a masterpiece, self-contained with its own fate, no wonder you dare act so boldly."

Bribing the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 with earth vein energy.

Allying with the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 to gather troops and besiege Miaoyin True Person.

Did people really not think of doing such a thing?

Of course not.

The Primordial Saint Sect had noticed the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 for a long time.

How could no one have thought of this?

But why had no one done it until now?

Because it wasn't worth it.

Don't be fooled by how Lü Yang seemed fine now.

That was only because he was in the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 .

Once he returned, heavenly punishment would inevitably follow.

After all, two people left with Earth Fiend Qi, but only one returned.

In the judgment of heaven and earth, that was considered a 【loss】 .

If no one was punished, then who should be?

To avoid punishment, one must bring back even greater Realm Heaven Qi.

Let heaven and earth judge it as 【profit】 or 【no loss】 to escape calamity.

Heaven and earth do not care about the process, only the result.

Because no one wanted to suffer heavenly punishment for no reason, most cultivators traveling to Realm Heaven would choose mutual cooperation, even in the Primordial Saint Sect.

However, Lü Yang was different.

Not to mention his Immortal Fetus Clone had its own fate, making it difficult for heavenly punishment to touch his true body.

Even if it did, he was confident in resolving the issue.

'As long as I bring back even more Realm Heaven Qi, all problems will cease to be problems.'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang glanced at Chen Anmin beside him, his eyes narrowing as he stared at the dazzling 【Bright Heavenly Emperor】 shining on his body.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,614 words ]

Chapter 263: The Deal with Suo Huan

Although the appearance of Suo Huan, a Grand True Person, was somewhat unexpected, Lü Yang still remained calm, partly because he was currently under the protection of tens of thousands of troops.

At his side, there was also a 【Tomorrow's Son of Heaven】 .

Suo Huan, like himself, was an Outer Heavenly Demon, both considered targets to be eliminated by the local natives of the 【Wanwu World】 , meaning they still stood on the same side.

On the other hand, it was also because Lü Yang had already seen through Suo Huan's intentions.

When the True Person Miaoyin was killed, Suo Huan had only watched from the sidelines without any intention of intervening, which showed that he did not plan to get involved in Lü Yang's affairs.

Since that was the case, it was unlikely he would suddenly decide to make a move against Lü Yang now.

'So, he sold out Miaoyin?'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately raised his eyebrows slightly, casting a doubtful glance, then tentatively asked, "Senior, are you a True Person of my Saint Sect?"

“.”

As soon as Lü Yang said this, Suo Huan's expression immediately stiffened, feeling as if he had been insulted.

What did that mean!

Suddenly calling him a True Person of the Saint Sect?

"Inferior one Suo Huan, a rogue cultivator from overseas, does not deserve the title of True Person of the Saint Sect."

Suo Huan did not put on the airs of a Grand True Person but instead acted as if he were conversing with Lü Yang as an equal.

"I originally intended to sell Fellow Daoist a favor."

"Outrageous! How dare an Outer Heavenly Demon be so arrogant?"

At this moment, Chen Anmin suddenly roared in anger, interrupting the conversation between Lü Yang and Suo Huan, while also revealing obvious hostility toward Suo Huan.

Suo Huan's smile remained unchanged upon seeing this.

Lü Yang, however, stayed calm and spoke indifferently to Chen Anmin, "Stand down and reorganize the troops. I will speak a few words with this Outer Heavenly Demon."

"But..."

Chen Anmin immediately became a little anxious.

“Hmm?”

Lü Yang let out a muffled hum from his nose, staring straight at Chen Anmin.

Seeing this scene, Chen Anmin immediately panicked and took a step back.

After all, the current army was personally built by Lü Yang.

His prestige was so high that even Chen Anmin instinctively chose to obey.

However, after stepping back, when he raised his head again and looked at his own life star shining like the rising sun, and thought of his identity as 【Tomorrow's Son of Heaven】 , his eyes revealed unwillingness.

Seeing this, Lü Yang's expression grew even deeper.

On the other side, Suo Huan smiled slightly and asked, “How about it? As long as Fellow Daoist is willing, I am willing to help you leave this place safely and without harm.”

“...No need.”

Lü Yang was silent for a moment before shaking his head.

“Senior's kindness is appreciated, but I have my own plans. There is no need to accept this favor.”

“Is that so? What a pity.”

Suo Huan was not surprised when he heard this and nodded slightly, then smoothly shifted the topic.

“In that case, why don't we discuss another deal?”

Lü Yang was somewhat curious upon hearing this, but saw Suo Huan calmly continue.

“I want to know all the details of how Fellow Daoist Chong Guang once sought the Golden Core, as well as his methods.”

“Fellow Daoist was once Chong Guang's trusted aide.”

“All those who entered the Blessed Land back then had their merit and destiny drained.”

“That foolish woman Miaoyin was one of them, adding insult to injury.”

“Only you retained most of your destiny. I doubt that was a coincidence... I am very curious about the reason.”

This was one of Suo Huan’s purposes for coming here.

For those in the late Foundation Establishment Realm, or even those nearing perfection, the most precious thing was the method of seeking the Golden Core.

Without great opportunities and tremendous fortune, such methods were nowhere to be found.

Suo Huan had such an opportunity only because he had once been the Child of Destiny in a region of the world.

‘My Golden Core-seeking method is called the 《All Spirits Return to the Ruins Dao Scripture》.’

‘It is a water-path method, bestowed upon me together with the Blessed Land before the fall of the 【Huanxu World】.’

However, the 【Huanxu World】 had only condensed a prototype of a fruit position at that time.

Although he had deduced the method himself, there were bound to be flaws.

Since Suo Huan fled the world, he had spent six hundred years trying to patch these flaws, piecing them together to finally give this Golden Core method some form.

But it was ultimately still lacking.

‘Like Chong Guang, with deep foundations and the support of a True Lord behind him, a Grand True Person like him could directly invite a True Lord to help perfect his Golden Core-seeking method.’

‘I, however, cannot.’

‘After all, I have no True Lord I can trust. I can only rely on myself to think it over again and again.’

‘Only by borrowing Chong Guang’s Golden Core-seeking experience do I have a chance.’

Even though this would at most slightly increase his chances of forming a Golden Core, even a slight increase was worth striving for with all his might.

Thinking of this, Suo Huan looked at Lü Yang again, bowed solemnly, and said, “I humbly ask for Fellow Daoist’s guidance.”

“If there is anything you desire, I can agree to it.”

“I have been cultivating overseas for six hundred years and have amassed some wealth.”

“If Fellow Daoist wishes to break through to the late stage in the future, I can also assist.”

As he spoke, Suo Huan revealed a circular light behind his head.

Countless scenes appeared within the light.

It was a land full of ruins, broken walls, and rubble, carrying a sense of deathly stillness, yet beneath that stillness, a thread of life was hidden.

“This is the 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 .”

Suo Huan sincerely said, “The Blessed Land holds the mystery of avoiding tribulations.”

“If Fellow Daoist breaks through to the late stage within it, it can at least reduce the power of the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation by more than thirty percent.”

This was both a deal and a favor.

Suo Huan unhesitatingly laid out all his cards without the slightest attempt to bargain.

First, because Chong Guang’s Golden Core-seeking experience was crucial.

Second, because he had heard Lü Yang’s name from the mouth of 【True Lord Zeng Cai Qiluo】 .

Combined with the presence of 【True Lord Qingcheng Feixue】 , this small True Person was clearly favored by at least two True Lords.

Buying favor was definitely worthwhile.

‘Miaoyin didn’t die unjustly, to dare provoke such a person...’

‘I’d be lucky to even build a good relationship with him!’

Perhaps when the two True Lords behind Lü Yang learned of this matter, they might think even more highly of Suo Huan.

He did not mind trying any opportunity that came his way.

Lü Yang, of course, had also seen through Suo Huan's thoughts.

'What a rogue cultivator...!'

Lü Yang knew all too well how hard it was for a rogue cultivator to achieve anything in this broken place.

Even reaching mid-Foundation Establishment was considered incredibly fortunate.

Late Foundation Establishment?

Still seeking the Golden Core?

Just thinking about it made Lü Yang feel that this Grand True Person before him was anything but ordinary.

At that moment, his expression also became much more serious.

"This junior currently has no use for the Blessed Land."

"Since Senior is sincere, just offer a little as you see fit."

“.”

As soon as Lü Yang said this, Suo Huan's face immediately turned bitter.

"Offer a little as I see fit?"

Wasn't that just asking me to give a little of everything?

The Saint Sect's True Persons were truly greedy beyond measure!

Though he thought this, Suo Huan's smile grew even more radiant.

He carefully sized up Lü Yang again, calculated for a moment, then lowered his voice and said, "I have some understanding of the art of artifact refining."

"If Fellow Daoist is interested, I can craft a spiritual treasure tailored specifically for you."

As soon as he said this, Lü Yang's eyebrows instantly rose.

After all, up to now, he had only used spiritual treasures that belonged to others.

Although there was no problem in wielding them, there was always a lack of intimacy.

But one must not underestimate this layer of intimacy.

If a spiritual treasure could harmonize with its master's soul and life, it could indirectly enhance the master's magical powers.

Moreover, only such spiritual treasures had the potential to "seek the truth," advancing alongside their master in the future and transforming into the legendary True Treasures.

This alone was enough to make Lü Yang's heart waver!

Suo Huan had clearly put thought into this.

Knowing that a customized, exclusive spiritual treasure was invaluable to Lü Yang, he proactively proposed it.

Seeing Lü Yang's interest, Suo Huan finally smiled.

He then took a step back and said, "This matter can wait until I set up the artifact furnace and make all the preparations."

"Then I shall invite Fellow Daoist to visit."

"By then, once the spiritual treasure is complete, Fellow Daoist can record Chong Guang's Golden Core-seeking experience for me."

"...Deal!"

Suo Huan's conditions were so thorough and considerate that Lü Yang naturally had no reason to refuse.

"Then I shall trouble Senior to go to such lengths."

"Not at all, not at all..."

Suo Huan cupped his hands in salute, then his figure gradually faded and disappeared into the air, never once displaying the slightest of a Grand True Person's imposing aura from beginning to end.

'Suo Huan...'

Lü Yang silently muttered in his heart, still pondering and calculating the background of this Grand True Person.

However, a voice filled with suppressed reproach suddenly came from beside him.

"Immortal Master, how could you let an Outer Heavenly Demon go!?"

Lü Yang snapped out of his thoughts and turned his head to look behind him.

He saw Chen Anmin standing there, his face full of anger as he glared at Lü Yang, the 【Tomorrow's Son of Heaven】 shining brightly above his head.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,622 words ]

### Chapter 264: Joy Turns to Sorrow

Seeing Chen Anmin's dissatisfied expression at this moment, his tone no longer carried the initial respect and admiration, but was instead filled with blame, Lü Yang couldn't help but sigh in his heart:

'In the end, it's just a dog that can't be properly raised!'

'Or rather, the time is still too short, and my prestige is insufficient. Otherwise, even if there was the lure of a fruit position and fate, the attitude shouldn't have changed so quickly.'

Chen Anmin's state was obviously wrong.

Lü Yang could tell that this was partly due to his own swelling ambition and partly due to the pull of the fruit position.

It seemed this realm was planning to turn hostile.

In the next second, Lü Yang noticed that the fate star above his head that belonged to a 【Villager】 suddenly extinguished.

The symbol of being a "local" disappeared out of thin air.

A distinctly abnormal aura began to spread, instantly triggering exclamations from the others.

Chen Anmin was stunned on the spot when he saw this.

"Immortal Master... you?"

Clearly, Chen Anmin had not anticipated that the Immortal Master who had helped him and even millions of 【Villagers】 to be reborn, would actually be an extraterrestrial demon!

But soon, he reacted.

'Extraterrestrial demon... this is an extraterrestrial demon! If I kill him, I can obtain the Supreme Position of the Night Son again, and by then I will be the Supreme of the World!'

In an instant, Chen Anmin's eyes turned red.

Then, he heard the "Immortal Master" in front of him suddenly let out a long sigh, and then looked at him calmly: "Anmin, you want to strike at me?"

Chen Anmin's movements paused slightly.

However, he quickly revealed a ferocious expression and shouted loudly: "Extraterrestrial demon, you caused the deaths of so many of my compatriots, and yet you still dare to deceive people's hearts!"

"Kill him!"

Before Chen Anmin's voice fell, he suddenly felt a sharp pain in his abdomen.

Not only that, at this moment, all those who had murderous intent felt the same pain.

"Puchi!"

In the next second, sharp claws directly tore through their bodies without any ability to resist.

One after another, fully matured Qi-Devouring Worms slowly crawled out from within them.

At the same time, they drained all their energy, spirit, and essence, reducing them from their peak to rock bottom in an instant.

"Boom!"

Almost simultaneously, a thunderous roar echoed from the sky.

The stars trembled.

The once clear sky was suddenly covered by dark clouds.

"Only now you realize? Too late!"

Lü Yang grinned, formed a hand seal, and directly recalled the Qi-Devouring Worms from within Chen Anmin's body, killing him in the process while beginning to operate the Qi Harvesting Technique!

In an instant, the stars shifted.

The sunlight that had originally fallen on Chen Anmin uncontrollably shifted onto Lü Yang under his guidance, and he absorbed it all.

Under the illumination of the sunlight, the towering illusory figure of three heads and six arms once again appeared behind him.

“Whoosh whoosh!”

The illusory figure continued to devour the brilliance of the **【Bright Son】** like a whale swallowing an ox, growing increasingly vivid and real.

Not only that, but the light of the fate stars of others who had attacked Lü Yang and were killed by the Qi-Devouring Worms was also completely harvested by Lü Yang!

Thud!

At this moment, those who had not dared to attack Lü Yang out of fear all knelt to the ground.

They only felt themselves growing smaller in front of Lü Yang.

Looking up, what entered their eyes no longer seemed to be a human being, but a divine statue.

The solemn and majestic face overlooked them, and everyone felt as if he was making eye contact with them.

They immediately lowered their heads in terror, prostrating themselves completely, not daring to look any further.

**【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 !**

“It's done.!”

Lü Yang leaned against the towering illusory figure, squinting his eyes in satisfaction.

Even with the dark clouds covering the sky and the crisscrossing lightning serpents above, he still savored it.

“Fruit position with sentience... in the end, it's just a fool.”

Lü Yang sneered coldly.

If this realm's fruit position had been a bit smarter, there was no way it would have allowed him to implant the Qi-Devouring Worms into the populace.

However, on one hand, the other party coveted his Earth Vein Qi.

On the other hand, seeing him fighting against Real Person Miaoyin, they completely failed to notice the danger.

As a result, they let him do as he pleased, not realizing that he had been waiting for this very moment.

A single 【Bright Son】 was enough to condense the Master Body!

“And you turned hostile first. This is self-defense.”

Lü Yang exhaled deeply, sensing the empowerment brought by the 【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 .

To be frank, this was almost equivalent to an innate divine ability!

But before he could fully sense its wonders, a loud noise suddenly erupted from the sky.

“Boom!”

In the next second, Lü Yang saw that all the civilians in whom he had planted the Qi-Devouring Worms had simultaneously lost their fate star's light.

A vast area of the sky suddenly dimmed!

Clearly, the fruit position of 【Wanwu Realm】 had realized something was wrong and decisively abandoned all these civilians!

Immediately after, Lü Yang saw multiple blood and Qi rainbows rising in the distance—it was the direction of the government soldiers.

However, the aura was countless times stronger than usual.

The leader's aura had even reached the level of Chen Anmin just moments ago, clearly another Supreme Son!

“... Looks like they can't afford to play anymore.”

Lü Yang raised his eyebrows.

The court's soldiers of 【Wanwu Realm】 had not been implanted with Qi-Devouring Worm eggs.

If they really came charging in, he would surely have no place to die.

“Fortunately, my goal has already been achieved.”

With the 【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 accomplished, there was no longer any point in staying.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately activated the imprint in his sea of consciousness.

Soon, a voice rang in his mind: “Eh? You’re done so soon?”

It was clearly the childish and surprised voice from the 【Heaven-Penetrating Hall】 of the Primordial Saint Sect: “Wait a bit, I’ll pull you back now.”

The pull from the 【Heaven-Penetrating Hall】 required an absolutely safe environment.

Otherwise, under the mutual interaction of heaven and earth’s Qi, even the 【Heaven-Penetrating Hall】 couldn’t just pull someone back out of thin air.

That was why Real Person Miaoyin had been unable to escape when she was surrounded.

However, Lü Yang had no such troubles now.

Soon, a brilliant light began to rise from his body.

Almost at the same time, the thunder in the sky grew even louder.

It felt as if someone was furiously roaring, making Lü Yang’s heart race with fear.

‘Looks like I’ve really pissed off the realm this time?’

‘If I come again next time, I might be discovered immediately and surrounded... the difficulty of Qi harvesting will skyrocket, no wonder Second-Grade True Techniques are so hard to practice!’

For Second-Grade True Techniques, the 【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 was just the foundation.

If he wanted to completely strip away the fruit position of 【Wanwu Realm】 , one round of Qi harvesting was far from enough.

For gains like this, he would need to come back at least four or five more times to have any real hope of stripping it.

But to enrage the realm so much after just one round?

Even a peak Foundation Establishment cultivator would face significant danger if they tried again.

If they were even slightly careless, dying in 【Wanwu Realm】 wouldn't be impossible!

However...

'I'm different!'

'If I fail in this lifetime, I'll just come back in the next.'

'When hatred resets, I can repeat the process the same way—after four or five lifetimes, wouldn't that be enough?'

The greatest difficulty of Second-Grade True Techniques simply didn't exist for him!

'There is hope on this path... there is hope indeed!'

Realizing this, Lü Yang's mood immediately brightened.

He withdrew the 【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 , and even had the leisure to wave at the sky:

"Goodbye."

However, as his words fell, Lü Yang's expression gradually froze.

The thunder in the sky paused at the moment of its brightest flash.

All the radiance and spiritual energy froze in a single instant, eventually presenting a subtle mist-like state.

"....."

Lü Yang's smile slowly faded.

The smoothly operating mind suddenly felt as if a boulder had appeared out of nowhere, suppressing his thoughts and obstructing his clarity.

Unknowingly, all sound had vanished.

The thunder, the shouting—everything disappeared.

Even Lü Yang instinctively held his breath, not daring to make a sound.

Driven by a strange instinct, he slowly turned around.

It was like lifting a veil of confusion.

Only then did he realize that someone had been with him all along.

Since he entered 【Wanwu Realm】 , this person had been by his side.

Following him as he distributed Qi-Devouring Worm eggs.

Following him as he surrounded and killed Real Person Miaoyin.

Following him as he traded with Suo Huan.

Following him as he refined the 【Universal Phenomenon Master Body of Qiantian】 ...

‘Who is it!?’

Lü Yang slowly lifted his gaze.

He saw that person standing there leisurely, hands behind his back, looking up with interest at the dark clouds above.

Dressed in a simple, ancient green robe, like a figure stepping out of history.

However, when Lü Yang saw the person’s face, he fell into even greater shock.

Because he couldn’t be more familiar with that face.

‘Chong Guang? How could it be Chong Guang!’

At that moment, Lü Yang felt as if he had fallen into an ice cave, but his mind instantly became clear.

‘No... it’s a Dao Sin! Chong Guang failed his Golden Core pursuit and turned into a Dao Sin after death!’

With that realization, an even greater shock followed.

Such a major event—failing in the pursuit of the Golden Core and becoming a Dao Sin after death—why had he not thought of it before?

No, it wasn't just him.

None of the True Sovereigns in the world had thought about the Dao Sin problem.

It was as if it had never existed from the start!

... A Knowledge-Perception Obstruction?

'He is that 【Great Forest Wood】 ... True Sovereign Ang Xiao Bi Ri!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,514 words ]

Chapter 265: Facing Angxiao

"The Great Forest Wood bears branches that shake the wind, limbs that prop up the moon, with the virtue of rising from valleys to tower into the sky, and the merit of soaring into the clouds to block out the sun."

Ever since Lü Yang learned that the True Lord who reversed the 【Earth of the Stars】 was suspected to be the Primordial Saint Sect's 【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】 , he had researched this Dao Fruit in detail.

【Great Forest Wood】 was known as "its voice reaches the Nine Heavens, its shadow covers ten thousand acres", the supreme of the wood element, one of the highest fruit positions, with only 【Pine and Cypress Wood】 being capable of competing with it.

However, as everyone knew, 'competing' already meant falling short, so there was actually still a gap between them.

Only after understanding it did he realize how terrifying it was.

'Blocking the sun, blocking the sun, truly covering the sky and the sun, even the heavens are hidden!'

'This Knowledge Obstruction, who the hell could even stop it?'

Thus, at this moment, Lü Yang felt nothing but gratitude in his heart: Heaven bear witness, fortunately, he had been cautious and only sent out his Immortal Embryo clone, while his real body still hid in the Primordial Saint Sect.

Otherwise, wouldn't it have been the end?

Though that was the case, Lü Yang still dropped to his knees without a second thought, lowered his head, and respectfully said, "Disciple Lü Yang pays respects to Angxiao Sun-Blocking True Lord."

Despite his respect, he was still pondering one thing.

Why was this person following him?

With his current cultivation, although he had shone brightly in the **【Kingdom of Qing】**, his social circle was still limited to the mid-Foundation Establishment level, not even considered a Grand True Person.

How could someone of this level attract the attention of the **【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】** ?

And he even specifically used the Knowledge Obstruction to have Chong Guang Dao Sin follow him all the way.

If Lü Yang wasn't about to leave, this True Lord probably would have silently followed him to the end.

Just thinking about it made Lü Yang's heart turn cold.

'Good thing I don't have the habit of talking to myself!'

Heaven bear witness, if he had carelessly talked to himself about the reset of the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes just because there was no one around, wouldn't everything have been finished?

'This damned Great Forest Wood, so damn sinister!'

While cursing in his heart, Lü Yang humbly said, "This disciple is foolish and does not know what matter troubles True Lord to descend in person, I am deeply fearful and uneasy."

As soon as Lü Yang's words fell, the surroundings fell into dead silence.

Chong Guang Dao Sin—or rather, the mysterious **【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】**—was still looking up at the sky, gazing with interest at everything around.

After a long time, he finally shifted his gaze to glance at Lü Yang:

"Truly worthy of being a prodigy of my Saint Sect."

This light sentence made Lü Yang's heart tighten: Did he admit it?

One must know, until now, even the Clear Snow True Lord had only vaguely mentioned that the mysterious True Lord who reversed the 【Earth of the Stars】 might be Angxiao.

Yet listening to his response now, it seemed to confirm this identity!

Immediately after, this 【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】 continued, "I was just thinking, how could the Saint Sect's prodigy be such an average person in terms of fortune?"

"So I specially followed you for a while. Now it seems Chong Guang wasn't wrong. Though your fortune is average, your methods are quite impressive."

"As for talent and comprehension... hmm, your reputation from the Nether Name is well deserved."

"What a pity."

As these words fell, Lü Yang nearly failed to control his law body, nearly breaking into cold sweat.

So that was the reason for following him?

Could it be that he suspected Lü Yang had obtained some great opportunity, so he secretly followed, planning to reveal himself and snatch it once something good was found?

And the "what a pity" was because nothing good was discovered?

'You damned animal!'

Just as Lü Yang cursed inwardly, the True Lord suddenly spoke again.

His voice was calm, yet carried a certainty as if he could see through Lü Yang's heart:

"Were you just cursing me?"

"...This disciple is terrified. This disciple holds nothing but admiration and love for True Lord..."

Though Lü Yang was shocked inside, he remained steady.

After all, he was already a True Person at Foundation Establishment, which was not the same as Qi Refining.

Even a True Lord couldn't possibly read minds.

"Spare me that nonsense."

The True Lord laughed and said, "I don't need to read minds to know what you're thinking. After all, I too was treated like this by other True Lords back then, advancing step by step."

"Back then, I swore that if one day I mastered divine powers, I would treat others the same way."

'Since I was drenched in the rain, why should you be allowed to hold an umbrella?'

Hearing the True Lord say this, Lü Yang dared not respond and could only continue lowering his head as if he hadn't heard, while preparing to self-destruct at any moment.

After all, his real body was still in the Saint Sect.

At most, he would lose this Immortal Embryo clone.

He didn't believe this True Lord could send down a giant hand from the sky to capture him from the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds.

As long as his real body remained safe, the clone's death meant nothing since it was created for this purpose.

However, the next moment, Lü Yang suddenly realized: This wasn't the reaction he should be having!

What was his current situation?

He was the only True Person cultivating the 【City Wall Earth】 in this era, yet the 【City Wall Earth】 had already fallen into the hands of the Pure Land.

Strictly speaking, his Dao path was cut off.

If he had only just reached the early Foundation Establishment stage, it would be one thing.

But now, he was already in the mid-stage, on the verge of completion, and even had a decent chance to achieve Grand True Person.

In such a situation, how could he not worry about his Dao path?

If he was worried about his Dao path, how could he possibly remain silent upon seeing such a powerful figure as the 【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】 ?

Anyone who longed for gold would risk their life to ask for a chance, even in the face of overwhelming pressure.

Taking the initiative to speak was the proper reaction.

If he kept silent all the way... it might actually make the True Lord suspect he had some hidden trump card!

Realizing this, Lü Yang hurriedly kowtowed heavily, putting on a brave face of overcoming inner fear and risking his life, gritting his teeth and saying softly:

"Disciple has long heard of True Lord's great name, like thunder shaking the ear. True Lord was also once a senior of my Saint Sect. I only beg senior to grant this disciple a bright path..."

He finished speaking with immense fear, not even daring to look at the True Lord.

Little did he know that seeing him take the initiative to speak, the True Lord revealed a smile, and the faint suspicion that had arisen due to Lü Yang's earlier silence completely vanished.

'It seems this kid really has no special opportunity.'

The next second, Lü Yang saw the figure of the 【Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord】 , who had secretly taken over Chong Guang Dao Sin's body to walk the mortal world, gradually dim.

Only a lingering voice was left:

" 【City Wall Earth】 is the supreme of the earth element, a superior fruit position. Beneath earth lies the 【Netherworld】 . If you are willing, enter my 【Netherworld】 , and there may be a sliver of hope."

As the words fell, the True Lord's figure finally disappeared completely.

Gone?

Could he be hiding again?

Lü Yang was left shaken, but the world that had almost frozen before resumed its normal flow, as if the earlier conversation had been nothing more than a fleeting dream.

Yet he still could not understand.

Just because he was the Saint Sect's prodigy, would someone really follow him for that reason alone?

Would a mighty True Lord really take a junior who wasn't even a Grand True Person that seriously?

Someone worthy of alarming a True Lord should at least be a Grand True Person, right?

Speaking of the Grand True Persons he encountered in the Ten Thousand Martial Realm...

At this thought, Lü Yang suddenly had a deeper doubt.

Was this True Lord really 【Angxiao】 ?

After all, 【Angxiao】 was a True Lord of the Saint Sect.

Why would he act so sneakily?

Why would he target only Lü Yang's clone, instead of approaching his real body directly?

It was all so puzzling!

There were already too many mysteries surrounding this True Lord.

Adding the damned Knowledge Obstruction on top of it all, it was all too easy to overlook crucial clues.

And one wouldn't even know what they had overlooked!

Thinking about it, Lü Yang stopped pondering the question of "why the True Lord followed him" and naturally cast it aside.

Meanwhile, in another territory of the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 .

Suo Huan burned incense and straightened his robe, sitting upright in his cave dwelling, respectfully bowing deeply to the figure that had suddenly appeared before him, prostrating himself fully and saying:

"Lowly one pays respects to the Sun-Blocking Angxiao True Lord!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,599 words ]

## Chapter 266: Seeking Golden Core, Certain Death?

Although Lü Yang no longer pursued it in detail, his guess had not been wrong.

A dignified True Lord would naturally not personally act because of a junior.

Lü Yang was merely a pawn.

The one who truly connected with the 【Soaring Sky Covering Sun True Lord】 through the causally elusive boundary world of the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 was actually Suo Huan.

If not, why would he have attacked the Dragon King Sui Ying of the Four Seas Sect?

Did they really think it was just to trade with that foolish woman Miao Yin?

His true target had always been the half piece of 【Hidden Dragon Water】 in Sui Ying's possession!

That was a piece of Celestial Earth whose Yin and Yang had been reversed by the 【Soaring Sky Covering Sun True Lord】 !

It was precisely through this that Suo Huan had made contact with this True Lord.

And now, looking at Suo Huan kneeling on the ground, the True Lord spoke indifferently, seemingly unconcerned with his humility:

“You already have the Golden Core Seeking Method, so why do you still wish to see me?”

“True Lord, please see clearly, this lowly one is terrified.”

Suo Huan trembled as he spoke:

“All the True Lords from various factions have approached this lowly one, wishing me to validate 【Long Flowing Water】 and break the True Lord's Dao lineage. This lowly one is truly helpless.”

Upon hearing this, the True Lord glanced seriously at Suo Huan, then let out a light laugh:

“The Pure Land has perfected your blessed land for you, the Sacred Sect has helped you draw the resonance of the Fruit Position, and the Dao Court has bestowed you with an official rank.

The three forces have joined hands to give you a slim chance at seeking the Golden Core.

Such great fortune should not be considered helpless, right?”

“Though it is fortune, it is also tribulation.”

Suo Huan lowered his head and continued:

“【Long Flowing Water】 concerns the True Lord’s Great Dao. Even if this lowly one succeeds, I am but a rogue cultivator.

How could I resist the divine might of the True Lord?”

“I fear the moment of validation would be the moment of my demise.”

“Thus, this lowly one is willing to devote himself to the Underworld, serving at your side as a vanguard, only begging the True Lord to grant me a rightful Fruit Position.

I beseech the True Lord for mercy.”

Suo Huan’s tone was extremely humble.

However, he felt no shame in this.

As a small figure like him, if he did not lower himself, bow his head, or cast aside his pride, how could he seek the Golden Core?

He had not even sealed his Sea of Consciousness.

Ordinary Foundation Establishment Real Persons would seal their Sea of Consciousness, which could not be forcibly opened without special means, not even by a True Lord.

Yet at this moment, Suo Huan had deliberately opened his Sea of Consciousness, laying bare all his thoughts to the True Lord before him as a sign of sincerity.

For a moment, even the True Lord fell silent.

Because Suo Huan had not concealed anything, the True Lord easily read his emotions.

Yet, he found no trace of deceit or ulterior motive, only one clear thought:

‘Wants to be my dog?’

After a brief silence, the True Lord finally laughed:

“Good, you truly are a talent.

Since all parties want you to validate 【Long Flowing Water】 , then go ahead and do it.”

At these words, Suo Huan immediately felt dizzy and disoriented.

‘What!?’

He is letting me do it without the slightest concern!?’

In an instant, Suo Huan even felt a wave of panic.

To be honest, he had anticipated various reactions from the True Lord and had prepared accordingly.

He had even considered that the True Lord might view his validation of 【Long Flowing Water】 as a threat to his Dao path, and being unwilling to offer a rogue cultivator like him a way out in the 【Underworld】 , might simply kill him with a slap.

Thus, the one who came to the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 today was not his true body but a crafted avatar.

Yet, he had never expected that the True Lord would be completely unconcerned!

One must know that not long ago, the True Lord had been thrown into chaos by Chong Guang’s Golden Core seeking, which reversed all Celestial Earth under heaven, resulting in a fierce battle with over ten True Lords.

Under such circumstances, how could he allow anyone to validate 【Long Flowing Water】 ?

Seeing Suo Huan’s wavering expression, the True Lord finally laughed:

“If you validate 【Long Flowing Water】 and then enter my 【Underworld】 , I will value you even more in the future.”

‘He wants to bring 【Long Flowing Water】 into the 【Underworld】 ?’

‘Is he truly aiming for reincarnation?’

Suo Huan was filled with endless doubts, but his face showed no sign of it.

Instead, he appeared extremely moved, lowering his head and saying:

“Thank you for the True Lord’s mercy!”

“But True Lord, my chances of seeking the Golden Core are truly slim.”

This could be seen by comparing himself with Chong Guang.

What kind of background did Chong Guang have?

A solid Foundation Establishment at the peak stage, a blessed land of his own, a backer at the mid-stage Golden Core level, and numerous capable subordinates.

And what about him?

A lone rogue, barely achieving peak Foundation Establishment thanks to the Dao lineage’s bestowed official position, a half-crippled blessed land formed after the collapse of the boundary world, and no backing whatsoever.

Even having the slightest hope of seeking the Golden Core was already an overly optimistic estimate!

So, he needed more!

He did not care what schemes the True Lord had.

He had already approached three factions.

As long as it increased his chances of success, one more made no difference!

‘If only the Sword Pavilion wasn’t so unreasonable, I would have approached them too.’

Among the four great powers, only the Sword Pavilion had the harshest stance toward outsiders, killing them on sight under the pretext of it being their “fated opportunity.”

In the eyes of the Sword Pavilion, outsiders were mere filth.

Want to seek the Golden Core?

Sure, let us kill you first, send you into reincarnation to thoroughly temper you, and when you lose your past life memories, we will naturally bring you into the sect.

Thus, even Suo Huan, reckless as he was, had not dared to approach the Sword Pavilion.

“Your courage is truly great.”

Suo Huan's brazen request for benefits even made the True Lord raise an eyebrow slightly.

As his voice fell, the entire world seemed to halt in that instant.

A massive spiritual pressure descended with a roar.

Yet, Suo Huan, enduring the pressure, pressed his body even lower, his forehead firmly touching the ground as he spoke with a steady and forceful tone:

"This lowly one is merely unwilling to give up, seeking a rightful Fruit Position.

I beg for mercy."

His tone was extremely humble.

However, the determination within was unmoved by the True Lord's imposing might.

". Very well, I grant it."

In the next moment, the True Lord suddenly let out a light laugh.

In an instant, the chilling atmosphere melted away like ice under the spring sun, as if it had never existed.

The True Lord's figure disappeared without a trace, leaving behind a single droplet of water floating in mid-air.

At first glance, it seemed as insignificant as a mustard seed.

But when scanned with divine sense, it felt like sinking into an endless ocean, filled with countless twists and turns, its origin impossible to discern.

Only then did Suo Huan let out a deep breath.

Raising his head, he saw the droplet suspended in the air.

After a brief moment of contemplation, a look of immense joy appeared on his face:

"This is a Fruit Position Treasure!?"

A sweep of his divine sense instantly revealed the information in his mind.

"【Heavenly Virtue Beneficent Divine Water】!"

As the name implied, this water possessed the virtue of clarity and nourishment, the wondrous ability to benefit the world, bringing revival and prosperity, and meritorious contributions.

“This is the supreme treasure to trigger 【Long Flowing Water】 !”

If used during the Golden Core seeking process, it could cause 【Long Flowing Water】 to actively respond, significantly reducing the difficulty of elevating the blessed land by several folds.

‘Thirty percent, there is at least a thirty percent chance now!’

‘He is not pretending, giving me this treasure shows he truly wants me to validate 【Long Flowing Water】 .

Does he really have no fear that I might harm his Dao path?’

‘Or could it be...’

Thinking of this, Suo Huan’s expression gradually darkened again.

The joy that had just surfaced quickly faded, replaced by a chilling demeanor.

‘All the factions are supporting me like this.’

‘Do they truly not mind the emergence of a rogue True Lord, an outsider at that?’

Aren’t they worried that after I seize the Fruit Position, I might bring harm to the world?’

To be honest, he had originally thought this was something that would take over a hundred years to achieve, with a slim chance of success, so he had only intended to do his best and leave the rest to fate.

But so far, everything had gone surprisingly smoothly.

Almost every faction had agreed to his request without the slightest intention of refusal.

Although the conditions they proposed were harsh, they were still within his acceptable range.

They had not even asked whether he had contacted other factions.

He had prepared countless excuses, yet none were needed.

‘Too smooth.’

The more Suo Huan thought about it, the more horrified he felt.

He could not help but glance around and let out a bitter laugh.

He did not even know if the True Lord was still present!

Suo Huan raised his head, gazing at the unreachable sky above, but could only swallow his doubts and dared not voice them:

'Are they truly supporting me, or is it because they all firmly believe that my attempt to seek the Golden Core is doomed to fail, and I am certain to die?'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 267 : The Subtlety of the Dharma Body, Opportunity Lies in the Sea**

[ 1,494 words ]

Chapter 267: The Subtlety of the Dharma Body, Opportunity Lies in the Sea

In the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, on the Sacred Fire Cliff.

Accompanied by a dazzling flash of light, Lü Yang had just stepped out of the 【Heaven-reaching Hall】 when he immediately felt several divine senses fall upon him.

"Yuan Tu, where is Miao Yin?"

A True Person inquired, and Lü Yang immediately put on a sorrowful expression: "We encountered an accident, the World Barrier was perilous, Madam died violently, and this disciple failed to save her in time."

"Oh!"

Several divine senses quickly withdrew.

These must have been Miao Yin's past connections, yet none showed any intention of questioning her death.

Seeing this, Lü Yang was not surprised.

No one cared about the dead.

What's more, although Miao Yin was dead, he had returned safely without any sign of heavenly punishment.

This indicated that he had gained a great deal this time.

At this point, he was no longer someone ordinary True Persons could afford to provoke.

'When a person leaves, the tea cools; it is nothing more than this.'

Lü Yang shook his head.

The True Persons of the Sacred Sect were still too heartless.

They were nothing like him, who still cherished old sentiments, remembering many things clearly even after several lifetimes.

'Speaking of which, Senior Brother Zhao still owes me Contribution Points from several lifetimes ago.'

Unfortunately, the person was already dead.

He would find him in the next life.

While thinking, Lü Yang rode a streak of light back to Mount Luofeng and arrived at the secluded chamber where his true body was in closed cultivation.

Then, he withdrew his consciousness from the Immortal Embryo clone.

The clone, losing Lü Yang's control, immediately froze in place.

Its eyes became vacant, utterly devoid of spirit.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang's true body stretched happily.

This was the benefit of not splitting one's divine sense.

The clone and the true body were essentially one and the same, leaving no room for betrayal.

"All in all, it wasn't a wasted trip."

Lü Yang moved his mind and immediately extracted a phantom image from the Immortal Embryo clone.

It was a three-headed, six-armed, blue-faced, and tusked figure, which he then absorbed into his body.

【Heaven's Dominion Universal Capture Dharma Body】 !

The Second-Rank True Art had reached mastery.

This Dharma Body was considered a preliminary achievement.

It was both a divine ability and a spiritual treasure, much like the 【Nine Child Mother Heaven Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】 .

"This Dharma Body has four profound mysteries!"

"It was well worth the effort."

"With the blessing of these four profound mysteries, it is almost no less than an innate divine ability."

"For a Foundation Establishment True Person, this was practically a qualitative transformation!"

Back in the day, Ye Guyue had been just like this.

With a single 【Nine Child Mother Heaven Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】 , even when Lü Yang had drained her merit and fortune and clouded her mind with calamity, it was still a hard-fought battle when he set up the grand formation.

If she had been in her peak state, at the late Foundation Establishment stage, combined with the 【Nine Child Mother Heaven Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】 , Lü Yang would certainly not have been her match.

"Of course, if that were the case, I wouldn't have fought her."

"If I couldn't win, I could always run."

"After all, I've always specialized in bullying the weak and sickly."

"That is the true essence of cultivation."

"What's the fun in fighting equals?"

"Crushing the opponent is where the joy lies."

Thinking this, Lü Yang once again activated his divine sense to examine the Dharma Body.

" 【Heaven's Dominion Universal Capture Dharma Body】 , as the name implies, the four profound mysteries are 【Heaven's Dominion】 , 【Universal Capture】 , 【All Phenomena】 , and 【Dharma Body】 !"

【Heaven's Dominion】 had the highest status.

It could slightly reverse the 'Heaven's Will' within a certain range to favor oneself.

With the Dharma Body's blessing, every move carried the fortune of Heaven and Earth, allowing one's magical powers and divine abilities to operate smoothly.

Meanwhile, the opponent could easily fall into deviation.

"It sounds domineering, but in reality, it's not very useful."

Lü Yang shook his head.

How could Heaven's Will be so easily reversed?

This profound mystery worked flawlessly on Qi Refining cultivators, but it was ineffective against Foundation Establishment cultivators.

"At most, it could influence the early stage."

"And if both are at the mid-stage with equal status, 【Heaven's Dominion】 would have little effect."

"However, it happens to complement one of my innate divine abilities."

【Discern Right from Wrong】 !

Among the four profound mysteries of Lü Yang's innate divine abilities, 【Discern Right from Wrong】 was the least used.

It was a perfect tool for bullying the weak, but useless against those of the same realm.

However, things were different now.

"With the blessing of the Dharma Body's 【Heaven's Dominion】 , perhaps the effectiveness of 【Discern Right from Wrong】 could be greatly enhanced, making it truly useful even against those of the same realm!"

"Combining the two might lead to a qualitative transformation."

Though saying this, Lü Yang's face did not reveal any joy.

Instead, it gradually grew more solemn as he continued to examine the other three profound mysteries of the Dharma Body.

"【Universal Capture】, as the name implies, allows one to seize souls and thoughts from a distance."

"It is exceptionally useful against cultivators with sturdy physical bodies, bypassing their physical advantage to snatch their souls out of thin air."

"Good grief, this is practically calling out the name of the Pure Land Buddhist cultivators!"

"This is clearly targeted!"

"【All Phenomena】 is the same as before, allowing the fusion of external objects to temper the Dharma Body."

"The final 【Dharma Body】 is a blessing mystery, where the strength of the blessing depends on the degree of damage."

"The more severe the damage, the greater the blessing."

"It can double at its peak!"

"In other words, as long as I have the blessing of this Dharma Body, the more injured I am, the stronger my divine abilities and magical powers become."

"When I am on the brink of death, I will be at my strongest!"

After a moment of silence, Lü Yang put away the Dharma Body.

He couldn't help but admit that this Second-Rank True Art was a perfect match for 【City Wall Earth】.

Was this technique deliberately placed into his hands?

Lü Yang couldn't help but doubt it.

After all, this was too much of a coincidence.

Having lived nine lifetimes in this damned Sacred Sect, he had long understood that every so-called opportunity in the Sacred Sect always had someone fishing behind the scenes!

"Chong Guang must have known."

"After all, it was he who personally delivered the technique."

"But he's already dead, so I can't ask him."

"Could it be the descendants of Zouyu within the Sacred Sect?"

After all, obtaining this Dharma Body meant that if Lü Yang could successfully gather Qi in the future and pull the position of 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 into the main world to validate 【City Wall Earth】 , then 【City Wall Earth】 could absorb it and greatly enhance its power.

At that point, it might no longer be constrained by the Pure Land.

If the Sacred Sect provided additional support...

"Perhaps there is still hope?"

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt that this might really be the handiwork of the Zouyu descendants.

After all, reclaiming 【City Wall Earth】 had always been their long-cherished wish.

However, although he had taken the benefits, it didn't mean he had to follow through with the task!

This matter still needed careful consideration.

Immediately after, Lü Yang took out a sachet.

This was Miao Yin's storage pouch, which she had given him before she died.

He had already ransacked it once, finding only one item barely worth his attention.

It was a pill radiating a faint glow.

Ordinary True Persons, with their poor eyesight, might mistake this for an actual pill.

Only Lü Yang, with his considerable knowledge in formations, could discern its true nature.

"What a marvelous formation!"

"A Mustard Seed within a Sumeru."

"What's sealed inside?"

Lü Yang's divine sense probed inside and immediately saw a lake surging with massive waves, and within it, a colossal True Dragon with a look of utter despair, as if it had already given up.

Lü Yang was instantly stunned: ".Sui Ying?"

Almost simultaneously, Sui Ying also sensed his presence and immediately roared: "Suo Huan! If you want to kill me, then kill me! Trapping me here, what exactly do you want?"

"This True Dragon King was captured by Suo Huan?"

Lü Yang's expression turned strange.

A True Dragon, with its dragon horns, claws, and scales, was a treasure trove.

It was perfect for refining the 【Heaven's Dominion Universal Capture Dharma Body】 !

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly felt a slight movement in his heart.

Because he had brought back a large amount of 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 essence this time, not only had he filled the deficit caused by Miao Yin True Person and the Earth Fiend Qi, but he had also gained extra.

As a result, Heaven and Earth had indeed rewarded him with a large sum of merit and fortune.

It had replenished about one-third of what Chong Guang True Person had drained before, with plenty to spare.

It had also reached the threshold for seeking the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.

At this moment, prompted by his fortune, he gained an insight:

"My opportunity has arrived!"

"The second Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend needed to break through to the late Foundation Establishment stage... is related to this Dragon King, and it's overseas?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 268 : Magnetic God Mountain, Blessings and Disasters Intertwined

[ 1,472 words ]

Chapter 268: Magnetic God Mountain, Blessings and Disasters Intertwined

The search for the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend was the most mysterious part of the breakthrough process for Foundation Establishment True Persons.

On one hand, it involved the matter of fortune.

On the other hand, it tested a cultivator's mastery of the Dao.

Many True Persons, even if their fortune was present, lacked sufficient Dao attainment.

Their grasp of cause and effect was shallow.

They could only follow the guidance of fortune and act on intuition.

In the end, they often messed things up, failing to gain the Heavenly Gang or Earth Fiend while consuming their fortune.

However, those with profound Dao attainment were different.

True Persons with deep Dao attainment could completely deduce cause and effect along the path of fortune.

They could clearly calculate how to obtain the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend without going astray.

Lü Yang's Dao attainment was undoubtedly insufficient.

After all, his current Dao attainment had been supplemented by pills.

Although it met the standard, it was not exceptional.

His methods of deducing heavenly secrets were also lacking.

"Fortunately, I still have the Heaven-Seeking Instrument."

Lü Yang opened the divine eye at his brow.

The Heaven-Seeking Instrument emitted the light of Bing Fire, illuminating all directions.

The originally obscure cause and effect before him became clear.

This supreme treasure of heavenly secrets had helped Lü Yang tremendously.

Although it was not a treasure for combat, it had allowed Lü Yang to repeatedly turn danger into safety thanks to its deducing power.

Otherwise, just the ordeal with Arhat Fulong alone would have caused him great losses.

Let alone the ordeal with the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak.

Very soon, Lü Yang's face showed a look of realization.

"So that's how it is. This time, my opportunity is a mountain transformed from the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend called 【Magnetic God Mountain】 ! It happens to be near the territory of the Four Seas Sect."

"I just need to find it and refine it."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang spread his palm.

The 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 activated on its own.

It revealed the form of his next innate divine ability.

" 【Disrupted Magnetism】 !"

"The 【Magnetic God Mountain】 overseas happens to correspond to this divine ability. The deduction should be accurate, but this mountain won't be easy to refine."

Just like when he sought 【Wu Earth】 before.

Back then, in the Biyang Cultivation World, 【Wu Earth】 had become a conceptual existence.

Without special methods, it was impossible to extract.

This time was no different.

"This mountain has long been reserved by the Four Seas Sect."

"A Dragon King had already declared that they would wait for the Magnetic God Mountain to fully mature before refining it into a superior spirit treasure."

"If I rashly go to take it, I will definitely clash with the Four Seas Sect."

"This is the calamity. If I cannot break through the calamity, I will not obtain the opportunity!"

But how could he break the calamity?

It was obviously impossible to snatch it openly.

The only way was to conceal his presence and secretly infiltrate to refine the 【Magnetic God Mountain】 .

Only then would there be a chance.

But how could he infiltrate?

At this thought, Lü Yang looked at the formation pill that sealed Sui Ying.

In an instant, a flash of inspiration crossed his mind.

He could not help but clap his hands and laugh heartily.

"Cause and effect are truly mysterious!"

He happened to have a Dragon King.

If he sacrificed this Dragon King wholly to the Dharma Body, he could use the mystery of 【Myriad Forms】 to simulate the aura of the dragon race!

The mystery of the Dharma Body and 【Myriad Forms】 allowed it to refine external objects and encompass all phenomena.

Once it refined something, it could naturally transform into the aura of that entity.

So as long as he refined a Dragon King, he could perfectly disguise himself as a pure-blooded descendant of the dragon race.

With this, he could infiltrate the 【Magnetic God Mountain】 !

Once this thought arose, there was no more hesitation.

"Crack!"

Lü Yang clenched his five fingers.

In an instant, he crushed the formation pill in his hand.

Sui Ying in the formation did not even have time to let out a groan before dying on the spot.

Only then did he loosen his fingers.

A torrential blood waterfall rolled out from his palm.

Every drop of blood was as heavy as a mountain, flowing with brilliant golden light.

This was the bloodline of a Dragon Lord.

Even a single drop contained divine power.

Among the blood were also shattered scales, claws, and horns.

All of these were poured onto the 【Heaven-Embracing Myriad Forms Dharma Body】 .

Under the baptism of dragon blood, the aura of this Dharma Body grew increasingly terrifying.

At some point, a small coiled dragon appeared on its six arms.

In the next second, the Dharma Body transformed with a shake.

In the blink of an eye, where was there any trace of a three-headed, six-armed, blue-faced, fang-toothed appearance?

It had clearly turned into a true dragon lying at the center, breathing in and out rolling clouds!

"Good! Good! Good!"

Lü Yang felt the change in the Dharma Body's aura and immediately smiled with satisfaction.

With the blessing of this Dharma Body, disguising as a Dragon King was more than sufficient.

"However, there are also disadvantages."

"After all, I killed Sui Ying and used this to infiltrate the 【Magnetic God Mountain】 ."

"Once I am exposed, the combined force of old and new grudges will bring an even more intense calamity."

Lü Yang calculated with the help of the Heaven-Seeking Instrument:

"To refine the Magnetic God Mountain, I will need at least forty-nine days."

"It is impossible to completely hide from the Four Seas Sect."

"By the final seven days, conflict is bound to erupt."

This was unavoidable.

"Fine, it all depends on personal ability."

Lü Yang's expression remained calm.

With his current means, as long as True Great Persons or True Sovereigns did not take action, there were not many in the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm who could face him.

"A True Sovereign would never make a move."

"As for a True Great Person, if I break through, I might not be unable to fight back."

After all, with the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 in hand.

Once he reached the peak of the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm, he could immediately obtain the third innate divine ability, making him no different from a True Great Person!

Even without that qualitative transformation, if he could not win, he should at least be able to escape.

"Unfortunately, I must take action with my true body. The clone cannot do it for me."

After all, this concerned his Dao path.

The clone could assist with tasks but could not cultivate on his behalf.

Refining the 【Magnetic God Mountain】 could only be done by his true body.

As for that 【True Sovereign Covering the Sky】 ?

To be honest, Lü Yang was still scared to death.

He feared that the other party might secretly follow him again with mind-obscuring techniques.

But after thinking about it, he felt relieved.

"After all, the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 only takes effect after I die."

"Other than that, I have nothing that would tempt a late Golden Core True Sovereign."

"Even if that old schemer is really lurking outside the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, I'll accept it."

"The great Dao lies ahead. I can't just stop moving forward!"

Moreover, the other party might not still be following him.

If he feared this and that, what was the point of cultivation?

He might as well go home and raise pigs!

Besides, he still had his cheat!

Overseas, Four Seas Sect.

As the sole overlord overseas, the island of the Four Seas Sect was vast and divided into four directions.

The eastern part was the location of the Dragon Palace, the residence of the Dragon Lord.

At this moment, deep within the Dragon Palace.

A mass of indescribable clouds swirled within the palace.

Golden serpents danced wildly within, flashing from time to time.

Faintly, a towering black shadow moved through them.

Suddenly, the black shadow paused.

"Hmm?"

With a light hum, the cloud was pushed open by blazing flames.

A pair of golden eyes as large as mountains appeared.

A deep voice rumbled like thunder in the sky:

"Who dares to kill my descendant?"

The Dragon Lord remained calm and did not show anger.

After all, it had countless offspring.

Losing one or two meant nothing to it and was never worth remembering.

However, someone killing its offspring still damaged its prestige.

If it showed no reaction, others might imitate this behavior in the future, which would be truly troublesome.

Thus, it had already decided to make an example out of someone.

Moreover, the slain descendant was a Dragon King, which aroused its curiosity.

It immediately split its divine sense to investigate the heavenly secrets.

Soon, the threads of cause and effect extended from overseas all the way to the inland.

Finally, they landed on a place that left it silent.

Jiangbei, Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Primordial Saint Sect.

"Forget it. I won't bother with juniors."

Just a Dragon King.

It was not particularly important.

At worst, it could work harder next year to produce a few more.

It could always raise another.

However, soon the Dragon Lord narrowed its golden eyes.

"Something's not right... calamities entangle, blessings and disasters coexist, this person has unresolved cause and effect with my bloodline?"

"Magnetic God Mountain?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,126 words ]

Chapter 269: Not by One's Own Will

Overseas, in the Biyang Cultivation World.

As a streak of escape light broke through the thunderclouds enveloping the outer sea area, it swiftly dissipated, revealing a tall figure standing with hands behind his back, his clothes fluttering in the wind.

“Returning to an old place.”

Lü Yang surveyed his surroundings.

The last time he caused such a commotion overseas, the Biyang Cultivation World had already become a mere shadow of its former self after a great battle.

Ironically, without the suppression of the Immortal Alliance, the entire spiritual root system collapsed, yet this place began to flourish.

Although no one had broken through to the Foundation Establishment Realm, given time, perhaps in a hundred years, it might restore the grandeur of its peak days.

Lü Yang looked around and calculated with his fingers.

Although he had ventured overseas in his true form this time, he did not intend to immediately seek the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 .

Instead, he planned to first enhance his strength as much as possible.

‘Actually, I should hurry over.’

‘After all, the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 is crucial to my path; if I arrive late and the Four Seas Sect takes it, retrieving it would be hopeless.’

‘No, no, that's not right.’

‘Regardless, improving strength is always correct. Venturing overseas in my true form is already risky; without strength, even if the opportunity arises, I can't grasp it!’

For a moment, countless thoughts flashed through Lü Yang's mind.

Ultimately, the idea of "playing it safe" barely prevailed.

He took out a flying message talisman, ignited it with mana, and sent it out.

Soon, a streak of escape light flew from afar and landed before him.

Immediately after, a refined young man stepped out.

“Fellow Daoist Yuan Tu?”

His expression was extremely solemn, with a hint of surprise in his eyes.

Upon appearing, he stared directly at Lü Yang, not daring to approach immediately.

“Greetings, Senior Suo Huan.”

Lü Yang cupped his hands and smiled.

“I wonder if the agreement we made in the outer world still holds? I am here to request Senior to forge a spiritual treasure for me.”

Lü Yang's tone was very amiable, yet Suo Huan's expression grew increasingly tense.

‘Something's wrong!’

He could tell that the Lü Yang before him was his true form, not an outer world avatar.

But why would he come in person?

This was not the style of the Primordial Saint Sect!

Suo Huan had witnessed Lü Yang's methods in the 【Ten Thousand Weapons World】

.

This person's abilities and scheming were top-notch, deeply embodying the Primordial Saint Sect's way of handling matters.

Such a person wouldn't easily trust a stranger, let alone come in his true form.

Did he think he was some prodigy capable of surpassing his seniors?

Suo Huan asked himself: if it were him, he'd definitely choose to meet with an avatar.

Otherwise, what if he were ambushed?

“Senior?”

Lü Yang looked at Suo Huan's stiff expression, somewhat curious.

Under his gaze, Suo Huan's brows gradually relaxed.

“The agreement naturally still holds.”

Suo Huan laughed heartily, no longer dwelling on his earlier doubts.

His vigilance dissipated like the wind, thinking he was just worrying unnecessarily.

For a moment, the two felt like old friends at first meeting, engaging in lively conversation.

As the discussion grew animated, Lü Yang thought of the dangers in seeking the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 .

Having a great cultivator to oversee things would be beneficial.

So he immediately said:

“I am about to seek a Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend. If Senior is willing, after forging the spiritual treasure, perhaps you could accompany me. I will offer generous rewards.”

Upon hearing this, Suo Huan readily waved his hand.

“No problem!”

As he spoke, this overseas cultivator, who had lived cautiously for over six hundred years, now displayed a bold and generous demeanor:

“No time to lose. I recently found an excellent place for forging—a sea eye containing earth fire, with buried Geng Metal. Forging there, harnessing the metal's energy and refining with water and fire, will surely produce a top-grade spiritual treasure for you!”

After speaking, Suo Huan was momentarily stunned.

That 【Earth Fire Sea Heart Furnace】 was his stronghold, his most important base overseas.

Had he revealed it too hastily?

But soon, he reconsidered.

‘After all, he's a true person of the Primordial Saint Sect; he probably wouldn't care for my place. The priority is to help him forge the treasure and then seek the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend together.’

With that thought, he felt at ease.

Suddenly, Suo Huan felt his forehead damp.

He reached up to wipe it, amused.

With his cultivation, his body could still sweat?

'Truly a rare occurrence.'

Looking at Lü Yang beside him, who also wore an expectant expression, he noticed a large bead of sweat slowly rolling down his brow.

The two exchanged glances, both thinking:

'Haha! He's the same!'

Since that's the case, it's not strange.

The next moment, they cast aside distracting thoughts, each riding a streak of escape light into the sky, soon arriving at a desolate sea area.

Then, Suo Huan pointed with his hand.

Instantly, waves surged, parting to reveal the scene beneath the sea.

It was an undersea volcano with a dark hole, where waters converged, surrounded by a thousand fire veins spreading like stars encircling the moon.

"An excellent 【Earth Fire Sea Heart Furnace】!"

Lü Yang's eyes flickered.

He saw that this terrain was not naturally formed but was crafted through years of effort.

"Senior's divine abilities are indeed extraordinary."

Lü Yang cupped his hands toward Suo Huan.

Suo Huan stroked his beard and smiled, his usual reserved demeanor replaced with pride:

"Just a minor skill, not worth mentioning."

Suo Huan formed a hand seal, releasing a palm thunder.

The flags around the volcano shook, and the entire 【Earth Fire Sea Heart Furnace】 activated.

"To forge a spiritual treasure aligned with a cultivator's life is no simple task. Not only must the materials be top-grade, but it also requires an excellent furnace and refining with the essence soul. I can only provide the furnace."

"The other two conditions depend on you, fellow Daoist."

After speaking, Suo Huan looked at Lü Yang.

Lü Yang exhaled deeply.

“Senior, rest assured. I am well prepared.”

Though he spoke confidently, Lü Yang's actions uncharacteristically paused.

He still smiled, but cold sweat dripped from his face, his eye corners twitching, and his clenched teeth trembling.

Soon, he regained composure.

“Senior, please look!”

With that, Lü Yang waved his sleeve.

In the next moment, besides the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, he took out numerous spiritual treasures, including the Abi Sword, Invisible Sword, Imperial Palace Golden Seal, and Doushuai True Edict.

In an instant, the radiance of the spiritual treasures nearly blinded Suo Huan.

A surge of intense greed rose in his heart.

But the next moment, it was as if something veiled those desires, leaving only admiration:

“What a collection of spiritual treasures!”

Suo Huan clapped and laughed:

“Fellow Daoist, are you planning to refine all these treasures into one? This is highly risky; failure would mean losing them all.”

He shook his head repeatedly:

“However... your fortune is indeed profound.”

“If it were another furnace, I'd turn away. But in this **【Earth Fire Sea Heart Furnace】**, I happen to have a method!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,351 words ]

## Chapter 270: Startled Realization!

Before Suo Huan finished speaking, he saw a streak of light suddenly fly out from the 【Earth Fire Heart Furnace】 and reveal a figure after landing in front of the two of them.

The man looked handsome, though young, his temples were already streaked with white.

His demeanor had completely lost the nobility of the past, replaced by a touch of maturity and steadiness.

As soon as he appeared, he respectfully bowed to Suo Huan.

“Suo Huan Senior, and... a True Person!?”

The man turned his gaze toward Lü Yang standing beside Suo Huan, and immediately froze, showing a look of shock and fear in his eyes as he subconsciously retreated several steps.

Seeing this, Lü Yang let out a hearty laugh.

“So it’s Junior Brother Chongming!”

After saying this, he even stepped forward to pat Chongming on the shoulder.

However, this simple gesture nearly scared Chongming out of his wits.

He stared at Lü Yang with a horrified expression that seemed unable to be put into words.

Who the hell are you?

Get off Senior Brother Yuan Tu’s body right now!

On the other side, Suo Huan also laughed when he saw this.

“Chongming was left by the 【True Lord of Colorful Brocade】 at my side in the past, to assist in communication when necessary.”

This simple statement nearly frightened Chongming out of his senses.

He looked at Suo Huan, thinking that just earlier, Suo Huan had repeatedly warned him not to reveal anything about the True Lord and had even confined him here, forbidding him to wander about.

Yet now, Suo Huan had casually revealed this secret!

Or... was this actually not a big deal?

Chongming looked at Lü Yang, then at Suo Huan.

His previously furrowed brows seemed to be smoothed by an invisible hand, and his expression gradually brightened.

'I must have been overthinking!'

On the other side, Lü Yang also took it lightly upon hearing this.

The matter of the 【True Lord】 was insignificant to him.

He turned his head and quickly forgot about it.

What mattered more was refining the magical treasure as soon as possible to enhance his strength and then head to the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

"Senior, there's no time to lose. We still need to go to the Magnetic Divine Mountain. Let's start the furnace now."

Prompted by Lü Yang, Suo Huan eagerly nodded.

"Chongming, come over and help me control the furnace. I need to cast the spell to activate the earth fire."

".Yes."

Although Chongming showed a struggling expression when he heard this, his body was honest.

He thought he shouldn't delay their important journey to the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

Soon, the earth fire was ignited.

The first thing Lü Yang took out was the Abi Sword.

This spiritual sword had been taken from Blood Demon True Person and now contained four divine marvels, truly a rare treasure.

'Hmm? This is...'

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly paused.

He noticed that the Abi Sword before him remained bright for some reason, continuously emanating deep blood light.

‘...It seems to be one of Abi Sword’s divine marvels?’

Lü Yang recalled for a moment and felt that it seemed to be called 【Treading Danger】

.

He had always thought it was a good divine marvel, and it had even saved his life once.

What was its effect again?

Lü Yang couldn’t quite remember, but he didn’t mind.

Since he couldn’t remember, it probably wasn’t important.

What mattered was to quickly refine the spiritual treasure and head for the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang stopped dwelling on it.

The Abi Sword fell into the furnace, followed by other spiritual treasures.

Lü Yang didn’t hesitate and, except for the Myriad Spirit Banner, threw all his assets into the furnace.

Only when the furnace was stuffed full with the light of spiritual treasures did he turn to Suo Huan.

“Senior, I’ll trouble you.”

“Rest assured, fellow Daoist!”

Suo Huan laughed heartily, then made a hand seal and pointed.

In an instant, the entire 【Earth Fire Heart Furnace】 shook violently, with thousands of fire veins erupting simultaneously!

Endless fierce flames rolled out from the earth’s core, containing yin evil energy, instantly igniting the entire pill furnace.

Seeing this, Chongming hurriedly channeled all his magical power and pressed down on the furnace, sealing the lid tightly and preventing any of the fiery energy from leaking out.

The next moment, the furnace gradually turned red.

Seeing this, Suo Huan changed his spell.

The vast ocean outside the furnace poured down at once, cooling the furnace while drawing water energy into it.

“Fellow Daoist, this method of mine is no ordinary technique.”

Suo Huan smiled and explained.

“This method is called 【Water and Fire Co-Refinement Art】 , and it can only achieve its maximum effect with this 【Earth Fire Heart Furnace】 .”

“Your spiritual treasures are numerous, and ordinary methods cannot refine them effectively.”

“Only with this art, aided by both water and fire, with yin and yang combined, can your many treasures be smelted into one without damaging their individual divine marvels.”

Lü Yang’s eyes lit up upon hearing this.

“Oh? Is that true?”

“Of course it’s true!”

At this point, Suo Huan’s face suddenly showed a proud expression.

“This is the most exquisite refining technique passed down through the generations in our 【Huān Xū Realm】 .”

As he spoke, the sun rose and the moon set.

Under the combined power of water and fire, the treasures inside the furnace had all turned into a swirling mass of five-colored light, their shapes undefined.

“This is the moment!”

Suo Huan looked at Lü Yang and shouted.

“Fellow Daoist, you can now use your essence soul to refine it. Take this opportunity to set the form of your magical treasure so that all divine marvels may merge into one!”

Lü Yang didn’t hesitate when he heard this.

He immediately circulated his divine sense and spat out a radiant ball of bright blood.

The so-called 【Essence Soul】 referred to the essence of blood and soul, not ordinary flesh blood, but the blood of the soul, the purest part of one's soul.

Going further, this would be the 【Golden Nature】 !

As Lü Yang spat out his 【Essence Soul】 , his previously vigorous appearance instantly weakened.

His vision darkened, and a wave of weakness surged over him.

However, as the 【Essence Soul】 entered the furnace, Lü Yang quickly felt a sense of connection.

He watched as his 【Essence Soul】 merged with that swirling five-colored light, which finally settled into a form, revealing its true shape—a magical sword radiating profound light!

The latest novel first released on Six Nine Books!

This sword was colored like dark frost, with a dignified form.

Its spine resembled the boundary of the great void, with blade patterns hiding the star map of Heluo.

Its mouth was forged into a Chi dragon biting the clouds, and its guard was engraved with golden script in true decree.

Five colors entwined the hilt, and three holes were inscribed with spirit patterns.

“It's done!”

With a thought, Lü Yang saw the magical sword in the furnace transform into a streak of lightning and fly out, landing beside him with a pleasant sound of sword thunder.

“An upper-grade spiritual sword... no, it already carries a touch of 【True Intent】 !”

Seeing this, Suo Huan also showed a look of joy.

However, in the next moment, this joy gradually stiffened under the sword's light.

‘...What am I doing?’

At the same time, Lü Yang, holding the sword, also showed a dazed smile, his lips trembling, his expression indescribable.

The next second, both Lü Yang and Suo Huan, who had only been sweating slightly before, suddenly broke out in a cold sweat, their clothes instantly drenched.

Even though they had just opened the furnace, with fiery heat pouring out, they both felt bone-deep coldness.

Lü Yang looked at the sword in his hand.

The light flowing over the blade, illuminating both of them and severing the strange influence, was none other than one of the sword's divine marvels.

### 【Piercing Clarity】

This divine marvel had been achieved by merging Abi Sword's 【Treading Danger】 and Celestial Instrument's 【All-Seeing】 , elevating it to an even higher level.

Without it, they would not have seen through the illusion.

“Hoo...”

Lü Yang let out a deep breath.

Gone was the ambition and confidence he had when setting out to sea.

All that remained was deep shock and wariness.

He turned his head to look at Suo Huan.

Suo Huan, likewise drenched in sweat, stiffly turned his neck to look at Lü Yang.

Their gazes met.

Neither dared to speak first.

For a very simple reason.

‘Who knows if that 【Exalted Xiaosky】 is standing right beside me at this very moment!!!’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,576 words ]

Chapter 271: No Way to Avoid!

What kind of damned place is this, damned place, damned place!

At this moment, Lü Yang had only this single thought left in his mind.

To be honest, just now, for a moment, he had almost activated the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 by self-detonating.

‘It is definitely 【Ang Xiao】 !’

‘Although I used a clone, I did not split my divine sense, but instead entered with my consciousness, yet in the end, it was used as a medium to influence my true body!’

Lü Yang’s expression turned bitter.

He had not split his divine sense to enter the clone.

His original intention was to prevent the clone from being controlled by others, eventually developing its own consciousness and betraying the true body.

That was why he had used his own consciousness to control the clone.

Yet in the end, his guard had failed, and he had been remotely influenced by a True Lord!

Moreover, it was better when he was still confused.

Once he became clear-headed, it was even more terrifying.

Everything that had happened earlier seemed like a dream.

Many of his decisions and words felt like they had been shrouded in a layer of confusion.

It even made Lü Yang afraid to recall them too much.

‘I must have gone mad!’

‘I actually thought before that by coming overseas, as long as I could find the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, and break through to the peak of the mid-stage, I could even fight a Great True Lord.’

Was that really me?

‘Forget about whether I could win or not, even if I could, why would I fight? Wouldn’t it be easier to use the power of a Great True Lord to bully those in the early and mid Foundation Establishment stage?’

The more Lü Yang thought about it, the more his scalp tingled.

However, very soon, an even greater doubt surfaced in his heart: ‘Why me? I am just a mid Foundation Establishment cultivator. What virtue or capability do I have to be schemed against like this?’

Those involved are confused, while bystanders are clear.

Once Lü Yang finally jumped out of the influence of the Knowledge Barrier, he immediately understood 【Ang Xiao】's intention.

He wanted Lü Yang to search for the Magnetic Divine Mountain!

‘Luckily... luckily!’

Lü Yang looked at the magical sword in his hand.

Recalling the decision he had made earlier to ‘first increase his strength’, his eyes showed a trace of relief.

Fortunately, his nature was hard to change.

Even under the influence of the True Lord, he had still firmly held onto the idea of ‘playing it safe’.

First, seeking Suo Huan to refine a spiritual treasure, which by a lucky mistake, had actually allowed him to regain his clarity.

‘No... it might not have been just a lucky mistake.’

‘Would a True Lord really allow such a variable to occur?’

Lü Yang turned his head and looked at Suo Huan beside him, and asked in a low voice, “Daoist friend, tell me honestly, do you truly have full confidence in refining this spiritual treasure?”

Upon hearing this, Suo Huan also looked over, but only gave a bitter smile: “Full confidence? If it were an ordinary spiritual treasure, that would be fine. But you brought out so many spiritual treasures—how could I possibly melt them all with just my skills alone? Unless a True Lord intervenes! If I really want to refine it, at least ninety percent depends on heaven’s will.”

Suo Huan's voice grew softer and softer.

Lü Yang also looked at the magical sword in his hand, but he only felt as if he was holding a piece of burning charcoal, unbearably hot.

For a moment, he did not know whether to keep holding it or to throw it away.

Without the intervention of a True Lord, the success of the refinement depended entirely on heaven's will.

And yet it had actually succeeded?

Who would believe there had been no True Lord's hand behind it?

But if it was 【Ang Xiao】 , why go through all this trouble to wake the two of them from the confusion?

Could it be...

'...is there another True Lord?'

'Could it be that what Suo Huan and I experienced was actually just the result of True Lords fighting each other?'

Lü Yang rubbed his temples.

For the first time, he experienced the feeling of having no backing from a True Lord.

Everything was like looking at flowers through mist, being sold off and still helping count the money!

If this had happened before Cleansing Snow True Lord entered seclusion, how could he have ended up like this?

"Senior Brother? Senior?"

At this moment, Chongming looked at Lü Yang with a confused expression, then turned to look at Suo Huan: "Weren't you two still in a hurry to go to the Magnetic Divine Mountain—"

"Bang!"

Before Chongming could finish his sentence, his eyes rolled back and he fainted.

Suo Huan, however, remained calm and said, "Could you trouble Daoist friend to shine that sword light on him as well?"

Lü Yang shook his head and replied, "I already did. It's useless.

The sword light's mystery is indeed remarkable, but his cultivation is too low.

Although he was only affected through me, the influence on him is even deeper than on me.

Unless... that person willingly withdraws the divine ability, or a True Lord lends a hand, he probably won't wake up."

After speaking, the two fell silent.

Lü Yang instinctively tried to divine by pinching his fingers, but then gave up.

This was obviously a scheme set by a True Lord.

What was there for him to calculate?

He might even be misled further.

'Can I choose not to go, and return to the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds?'

Lü Yang's first thought was to flee.

But very soon, a chilling realization struck his heart: he had managed to leave the Primordial Saint Sect smoothly!

Lü Yang did not believe that the fact he had been influenced by 【Ang Xiao】 had gone unnoticed by the True Lords.

Yet he had been allowed to leave the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds without any obstacles, so naturally, so smoothly.

He hadn't thought much of it at the time, but now the more he thought about it, the more terrifying it seemed.

Did this indirectly reveal the Primordial Saint Sect's attitude?

'Have I been abandoned?'

This was not surprising.

After all, in most people's eyes, he was just a True Person whose Dao path had been severed.

No matter how brilliant he had been, it was useless.

He was not indispensable.

'If there is something more important, it's only natural to abandon me.'

'But what is this matter?

And what kind of role do they want me to play in it?

What kind of effect does the True Lord behind the scenes want me to produce?'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang suddenly turned his head.

Almost at the same time, Suo Huan also glanced at him, then revealed a bitter smile.

Clearly, his thoughts had not lagged behind Lü Yang's.

'Just like back then in the 【Ten Thousand Weapons World】 , I was merely incidental.

Suo Huan was the true target!'

' 【Ang Xiao】 's real target was him, using me to push Suo Huan to seek that Magnetic Divine Mountain?

Impossible, the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend were useless to him.'

Under the illumination of the sword light, Lü Yang's thoughts became even clearer, turning as quickly as lightning.

The next second, he suddenly lowered his head and looked at the magical sword in his hand.

'The reason this spiritual sword could be refined was because a True Lord had secretly intervened.

And precisely because of it, Suo Huan and I were able to wake up from the confusion.'

'That's it! This is my true purpose!'

"My role is to help Suo Huan regain his clarity!"

In an instant, Lü Yang's face finally showed a look of sudden realization:

'I was wrong! Completely wrong!

The mastermind behind this is actually not 【Ang Xiao】 !'

Until just now, Lü Yang had thought that 【Ang Xiao】 had hooked their fates, dragging him and Suo Huan into this game, and then a mysterious True Lord had stepped in to save them.

However, the truth might be the exact opposite.

【Ang Xiao】 was actually the one who had come to save them!

‘Suo Huan was the one deeply trapped in the scheme without realizing it.

Ang Xiao used my hand to pull him out, refining this magical sword to wake him up!’

That made much more sense!

As this realization dawned, Lü Yang’s expression grew even more bitter:

“If that’s really the case... then this means they want me and Suo Huan to move forward together!”

After all, both of them had relied on the sword’s mystery to regain their clarity.

Once they separated, although Lü Yang himself did not care, Suo Huan would inevitably fall back into confusion.

Under such circumstances, how could 【Ang Xiao】 possibly allow him to leave?

‘If I’m not mistaken, I must have already provoked a powerful enemy...

That’s right, the Four Seas Sect!

Because I killed the Dragon King Sui Ying!

Originally, the Heaven-Seeking Instrument had concealed the karmic ties, and no one should have been able to calculate it.

But now, who knows?’

‘If the karmic ties have really been calculated by the Four Seas Sect, and I am now overseas, I’m afraid only Suo Huan can protect me.

If I leave him, I will surely die at the hands of the dragon clan!’

What karmic mysteries?

It was clearly another form of True Lord’s chess match!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn't help but look at Suo Huan.

"Senior... what exactly have you done?"

As the words fell, Suo Huan also glanced at him and bitterly smiled:

"Seeking a way to survive.

Unfortunately... it seems that someone won't even allow me that single path of survival."

"It seems I have implicated you, Daoist friend."

"Don't mention it."

What's done is done.

Lü Yang naturally wouldn't complain any further.

After all, regardless of everything, they were now clearly like grasshoppers tied to the same rope!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,528 words ]

## Chapter 272: The Wave of Tribulations

Since they were like grasshoppers tied to the same rope, Lü Yang and Suo Huan no longer stood on ceremony, and even felt some mutual sympathy as they had both been manipulated by a True Lord.

"No matter what, it is still a gain in the end."

Suo Huan sighed and said, "Strictly speaking, this magical sword of yours, fellow Daoist, was not forged by me, but was formed naturally. No wonder it possesses the marvel of breaking through illusions to see the truth."

Lü Yang, hearing this, also glanced at the magical sword in his hand.

This treasure was refined using his own 【Essence Soul】 , equivalent to a 【Named Artifact】 bound to his body, recognizing only him as its master, with countless mysteries clear in his heart.

The quality of this sword even surpassed the Abyssal Sword.

After all, it was forged by fusing all the spiritual treasures in his possession into one, including the half-true treasure 【Imperial Golden Seal of Doushuai】 .

‘This magical sword... possesses no fewer than five divine marvels!’

Among top-grade spiritual treasures, this was already considered supreme, and could even be called a half-true treasure. Going further would make it a true treasure that could only be found by chance!

The first marvel required no elaboration, naturally it was 【Clairvoyance】 .

This marvel combined the 【All-Knowing】 ability of the Heaven-Observing Instrument and the 【Treading on Danger】 ability of the Abyssal Sword, allowing him to see through the heavenly mechanisms, keeping his mind perpetually clear.

The second marvel was called 【Divine Edge】 .

This was formed by combining the 【Slaughterer of Men】 ability of the Abyssal Sword with the 【Coiled Steel】 ability of the Invisible Sword, giving it the power to increase sword might after slaying enemies, capable of cutting through anything.

However, what Lü Yang valued the most was the third marvel, named 【Law Holding】 .

It was formed by refining the supportive marvels of treasures such as the 【Imperial Golden Seal of Doushuai】 , allowing him to wield it in hand and preemptively simulate the next divine power, raising his cultivation level by one tier!

If he broke through to the peak of the Foundation Establishment Middle Stage, with this sword, he would be able to feign the position of a Great True Person!

In addition, the fourth marvel of the sword also brought Lü Yang great surprise, an offensive marvel used to secure victory, named 【Proclaiming Might】 .

‘ 【Proclaiming Might】 , known as “When it moves, the flood dragon weeps and the true dragon hides; when it is still, the moon vanishes and the stars dim.”’

‘With this marvel’s blessing, the sword remains still while secretly gathering power, but when it moves, it astonishes the world, emitting light that reaches the Big Dipper and Ox Constellation. It is a fatal move to kill with one strike!’

‘If sword intent could be further cultivated, its power would likely be even greater!’

The only drawback was its immense consumption of magical power, and it could only be used once in a short time, requiring a period of recovery afterward.

As for the fifth marvel, it was rather intriguing.

Its name was 【Yuan Tu】 .

‘This marvel incorporates both 【Dragon Stripping】 and 【Named Artifact】 properties. First, it establishes me as the sole master of this magical sword, not to be borrowed by others.’

‘Second, it enhances the marvel of 【Dragon Stripping】 which severs destiny and merit. In addition to cutting off one’s fortune, it also gains the miraculous effect of severing karmic ties. In other words, when I kill with this sword, I do not bear karma! No matter who investigates afterward, they will not be able to deduce it, making it perfect for killing and looting.’

【Clairvoyance】 , 【Divine Edge】 .

【Law Holding】 , 【Proclaiming Might】 .

【Yuan Tu】 !

Lü Yang weighed the magical sword in his hand, feeling utterly satisfied, thinking that being lured overseas by a True Lord was worth it after all.

After all, he could start over again.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang laughed loudly, “From now on, you shall be called 【Wave of Tribulations】 .”

A simple name, yet it carried Lü Yang’s hope for his Dao path: to ride the wave of tribulations and ascend to the truth, wishing only to cross all tribulations and achieve True Lord status by seeking gold!

“Clang clang!”

As his words fell, the magical sword suddenly vibrated, letting out a clear sword cry, and Lü Yang could sense the joy of the sword spirit within, then immediately put the sword away.

Suo Huan, seeing this, also smiled slightly:

“Congratulations, fellow Daoist, on obtaining such a supreme treasure. Your Dao path now holds promise.”

“Senior overpraises.”

Lü Yang shook his head, his expression gradually turning serious: “This journey overseas is fraught with dangers. I ask senior to be frank with me... what exactly do you intend to do?”

“I seek gold.”

Suo Huan, upon hearing this, also turned solemn and said, “My Dao lineage... fellow Daoist can see it as well, it is an alien method from beyond the heavens. To seek gold, I must borrow the strength of various factions.”

At this point, Suo Huan straightforwardly laid out his plan: “I borrow the power of the Pure Land to perfect a blessed land with supreme Buddhist techniques. Then I borrow the power of the Dao Court, using a first-rank official position to boost my cultivation. Finally, I borrow the power of the Holy Sect, letting a True Lord sense my fruit position. Only by combining these three can I have a sliver of chance to seek gold.”

As his words fell, a shadow of gloom appeared in Suo Huan’s eyes.

“But looking at it now, bargaining with a tiger only ends with being devoured!”

What was originally a slim chance bought from three factions now seemed like a castle in the air. Although it was said there was a glimmer of hope, actually doing it might very well be a dead end!

Hence, there was the intervention of 【Ang Xiao】 .

“I was deceived by the True Lord, single-mindedly seeking gold. If it weren’t for the divine marvel of your magical sword, fellow Daoist, awakening me, I might have already dashed myself to death on that fruit position.”

Immediately afterward, Suo Huan began to calculate again.

With the 【Clairvoyance】 marvel, the previously tangled mess of cause and effect became much clearer, at least allowing a thread to be traced.

“The key to this journey... lies in the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 !”

Suo Huan’s expression grew serious: “Fellow Daoist seeks the celestial energies of the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, and that 【Yin Wood】 energy lies on the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 , but not within the mountain itself.”

“What fellow Daoist actually needs is the magnetic power of the 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 , the environment of the mountain. However, the mountain itself is the true

treasure! It is a fragment left behind after 【True Lord of Heavenly Virtue】 fell, when his cave heaven merged with the overseas world!”

In an instant, Suo Huan’s eyes lit up.

‘So it was like this...’

Lü Yang frowned. 【True Lord of Heavenly Virtue】 was the one who achieved the 【Wall Earth】 , but was ultimately slain overseas by the True Lord of Clear Snow from the Sword Pavilion!

The 【Magnetic Divine Mountain】 was the fragment of his cave heaven after death?

“A fragment of a cave heaven is a natural place for ascension. If I could establish a blessed land within that divine mountain, I could save at least thirty percent of my effort!”

Suo Huan let out a long breath.

“However... that divine mountain has long been regarded by the Four Seas Sect as their possession. If I wish to seek gold, I will inevitably clash with the Four Seas Sect, and a bloody slaughter is unavoidable.”

“I understand now! This is my true role!”

Suo Huan sighed deeply: “The True Lords of various factions have been using me all along, dangling the chance to seek gold in front of me, but in reality, they want me to unleash a bloodbath overseas!”

“They want to cleanse the overseas territories without getting their hands dirty with karma, so using me, an alien cultivator from beyond the heavens, is just perfect!”

As Suo Huan finished speaking, Lü Yang also showed a strange expression: “I will face a tribulation in seeking the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend energies, and it will surely attract the attention of the Four Seas Sect.”

So, was he the bait again?

‘First use me as bait to draw out the cultivators of the Four Seas Sect, then have Suo Huan kill them all. From start to finish, it’s us two bearing the karma.’

‘Damn those beasts!’

While Lü Yang cursed angrily in his heart, he also lowered his head...

What was even more frustrating was that even though they had seen through it, they still couldn't escape!

Because this was a True Lord's scheme!

How could mere pawns like them possibly escape?

At most, having gained self-awareness, they now had some room to maneuver, with a chance to seek more benefits and find a way to survive.

"The grand trend is irreversible, but the minor trends can be altered..."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's gaze suddenly shifted, looking towards the overseas direction.

If things were truly as Suo Huan had deduced, with three factions joining forces to have him cleanse the overseas territories, then what about the Four Seas Sect? What was the attitude of that Dragon Lord of the True Dragon Clan towards this matter?

And what role did 【Ang Xiao】 actually play in all of this?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,411 words ]

Chapter 273: Heaven's Will Is Hard to Defy

Four Seas Sect, East Island Dragon Palace.

The misty clouds flowed on the steps in front of the hall, while thunderous breathing sounds echoed within the hall, as if some enormous creature was resting inside.

It was only after stepping into the hall that one would realize it was not a giant beast.

But rather a handsome young man dressed in white, with refined and elegant features, leaning against the window, holding a pill scripture in his hands, reading it with great interest.

At this moment, a woman walked into the hall.

The woman had a voluptuous figure, a red cinnabar mark between her brows, and her appearance was graceful and elegant, carrying both noble bearing and a touch of wild arrogance in her every movement.

As soon as she entered the hall and saw the young man by the window, she immediately raised her voice and said:

“Big brother! Look at the time, and you’re still here reading? If this goes on, I fear our Four Seas Sect, the entire Dragon Race, will lose all face!”

The young man helplessly lifted his head upon hearing this, glanced at the woman, and said: “Little sister, have you forgotten the royal father’s decree? We are to remain in seclusion, reciting the Daoist scriptures. This calamity is upon us. If we stay inside, father can still shelter us. But if we go out, nothing is certain.”

“But 【Sui Ying】 is dead!”

The woman shook her head, revealing sharp teeth as she spoke with hatred: “ 【Sui Ying】 was the Dragon King, yet he was slain by someone. How can we ignore this?”

【Sui Ying】 had once been a prominent figure in the Dragon Palace.

Especially since he shared a close relationship with the woman, for they were born of the same mother. The woman’s name was 【Sui Ling】 , making her 【Sui Ying】 ’s biological younger sister.

Now that her elder brother had died, how could she not hate it?

However, in contrast, the young man remained calm: “So what? Sui Ying died inland. Do you really intend to pursue the enemy there?”

“Give it up, little sister.”

The young man’s name was 【Tian Qiu】 , the second son of the Dragon King. Years ago, he had already reached the peak of the Foundation Establishment Realm and was also a trusted aide of the Dragon King.

Compared to the young and impulsive Sui Ling, he was much calmer. He immediately shook his head and said: “This calamity, I fear, is another inland sweep of the overseas forces. We cannot resist it. All we can do is hide. Staying in the Dragon Palace means safety. If we go out, there’s a ninety-nine percent chance of dying.”

“How can we just accept this...”

Sui Ling gritted her teeth upon hearing this, but soon seemed to recall something and said loudly: “But what if I lure that person into the Dragon Palace?”

Tian Qiu raised his eyebrows upon hearing this: “Lure him into the Dragon Palace... If you can truly do that, then it would be fine. Even the higher powers in the heavens would have nothing to say.”

True Lords made the plans, while True Persons played the roles.

The former only cared about the overall situation, while the latter handled the details. Victory or defeat depended on one’s ability, which was the unspoken rule among True Lords.

“Very well!”

Sui Ling became excited upon hearing this and immediately rubbed her fists together: “I already asked my friends among the Xuan Yuan Clan to divine this. That person is indeed coming overseas on this trip!”

“Karma shows that his target is precisely the **【Magnetic God Mountain】** that you valued before, big brother. I ask you to move that mountain into our Dragon Palace’s territory. This way, he either has to break into our Dragon Palace or give up his cultivation opportunity. Either way, I can vent my anger!”

“Magnetic God Mountain...”

At Sui Ling’s words, Tian Qiu frowned, bitterly smiling in his heart: ‘As expected of a True Lord, striking exactly at the vital spot, leaving me no way to avoid it!’

Why did he value Magnetic God Mountain?

Naturally, like Suo Huan, he also saw that this mountain was a fragment of a True Lord’s fallen Cave Heaven, which would be of great help to his pursuit of Golden Core!

If it were an ordinary thing, he could have let it go.

But this mountain was not something he could give up!

Yet if he did not yield, he would inevitably form karmic entanglements with the opponent. This back and forth meant the calamity was imminent, with a life-or-death crisis looming!

“Father...”

Tian Qiu raised his head and looked toward the deepest part of the Dragon Palace, as if sensing a pair of golden eyes as massive as mountains watching him, an overwhelming pressure bearing down.

'...I see now, father has already divined the karmic threads. Knowing all this, he still ordered me to stay in seclusion and recite the Daoist scriptures. He wants me to give up. But Magnetic God Mountain is a fragment of a Cave Heaven! If I obtain it, my chances of achieving Golden Core will greatly increase. How can I just give it up like this?'

For a moment, Tian Qiu struggled internally.

After a long while, he finally calmed down and looked at Sui Ling: "The mountain has not yet fully formed. Moving it into the Dragon Palace now would be a waste."

"Go there first, little sister."

"Bring more people with you to guard the mountain. If the inland cultivator who killed Sui Ying truly intends to seize it... then I will act."

"Little sister accepts the command!"

Sui Ling was overjoyed upon hearing this. She then walked away with light steps, leaving only Tian Qiu sitting in the hall with an uncertain expression, the Daoist scripture in his hands already closed.

"Heaven's will is hard to defy... Heaven's will is hard to defy indeed!"

"Boom!"

Thunder rumbled along with blinding white flashes across the sky, revealing the fury of the one behind the scenes, yet it was forcibly concealed by layers of dark clouds.

"Damn you all... You have pushed me too far!"

A repressed voice stirred the heavens and earth, causing the overseas seas to surge violently, generating countless natural disasters, seemingly about to turn into overwhelming waves.

However, in the next moment, three overwhelming forces simultaneously emerged, pressing down steadily like an invisible giant hand, suppressing all the waves. Before the disasters could fully form, they vanished without a trace, causing the once earth-shaking voice to suddenly grow much quieter.

"Amitabha, why is the Dragon King in such a hurry?"

"Those below are just pieces on the board. In chess, there are wins and losses. Accepting defeat with grace is the way to retain dignity. Getting angry only shows your small-mindedness."

“I...”

The Dragon King gnashed his teeth. Sure, chess had wins and losses, but damn it, you're not playing fair! Three of you against me, I move once, and you move three times!

This wasn't the first time this had happened. His true dragon race had once been the noble lords of heaven and earth, needing no cultivation, reaching Foundation Establishment upon maturity. The four Dragon Kings ruled the rivers, lakes, and seas with unmatched might. But ever since they fled overseas, their status fell, becoming mere subordinates of the human race, and everything had changed.

Back then, fleeing overseas, only he remained as the Dragon King.

And after countless years, the Dragon Race still had only him as their sole Dragon King!

'Every so often, they launch a purge overseas, harvesting us like livestock. I am nothing more than their designated watchdog!'

Every time a demon beast reached the peak of Foundation Establishment, nearing the Golden Core stage, it would trigger another “purge.”

Even the methods never changed—just throwing out a so-called “Golden Core opportunity” to lure the target out, claiming success or failure depended on their abilities.

—Such pretty words.

In reality, after so many years, the demon race had never won even once. The four great powers joined forces to eliminate all variables. How could such power be easily defied?

Unless...

In the next moment, the Dragon King decisively withdrew his divine sense, no longer confronting the three overwhelming forces in the dark. He returned to his true body in the Dragon Palace and opened his golden eyes.

Under his gaze, the invisible illusions were dispelled.

In an instant, a tall, leisurely figure came into view before the Dragon King, wearing a faint smile: “It seems the Dragon King has made up his mind?”

“...It's a deal.”

The Dragon King said in a deep voice: “As long as 【Ang Xiao】 you can help my Dragon Race produce another Dragon King and attain 【Heavenly River Water】 , I will let it go to your Netherworld!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,547 words ]

Chapter 274: Kill Him to the Fullest!

Outside the Four Seas Gate, Overturning Sea.

It was said that this place was not originally a sea, but a great island, resembling land, which in the last millennium catastrophe had turned into a battlefield for a True Lord beyond the seas.

As a result, the heavens collapsed and the earth shattered, and the grand island sank into the sea, along with the countless cultivators and over a hundred sects, all wiped out.

Since then, it had been named 【Overturning Sea】 .

Because it was close to the Four Seas Gate, the residence of True Lords, rarely did blind monsters dare to approach.

However, the scene had now changed.

Because this 【Overturning Sea】 now had a divine mountain rising from the sea, and the Magnetic Divine Light on the mountain shone upon the blue sky, causing the five elements to fall into chaos wherever it passed.

At this moment, right outside the divine mountain.

One could see schools of Cloud Whales cutting through the waves, bringing with them rolling demonic aura that gathered into a vast black cloud, slowly approaching and completely surrounding the divine mountain.

Next, the Cloud Whales opened their mouths.

Wave after wave of shrimp soldiers and crab generals wielding magical weapons, along with sea monsters forming formations, spread out across the sea as if walking on flat ground.

At the center of these demon soldiers, a woman clad in light armor that outlined her graceful figure stood tall.

A pair of immature dragon horns grew amidst her three thousand strands of green hair, radiating the brilliance of divine powers, making her the center of the countless demon soldiers, her pair of golden pupils burning like fire, illuminating the surrounding sea.

She was none other than the Dragon King 【Sui Ling】 .

Her cultivation was no match for Sui Ying, only at the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, having refined a single innate divine ability, but she was fully aware of this and had long prepared her means.

At this moment, looking at the demon soldiers filling the sky, Sui Ling squinted her eyes in satisfaction.

‘My daily hard training has not been in vain, finally gathering the soldiers needed for the 【Heavenly Demon Sea Commanding Grand Formation】 . This is the perfect time to show off my skills!’

Though Sui Ling intended to avenge Sui Ying, she knew that her cultivation was not even equal to Sui Ying's.

So this time, she had brought out all her resources, a total of four hundred and ninety thousand demon soldiers.

As they formed the formation with her at the center, she was confident that unless a Grand True Person came in person, she had the ability to suppress everything.

‘What a pity I still lack enough prestige.’

‘If my elder brother personally wrote the decree and summoned the palace demons, gathering a million soldiers, even a Grand True Person might not stand a chance!’

Besides that, Sui Ling had further plans in mind.

This was not only to avenge Sui Ying but also to seize the opportunity to build her reputation, gain the Dragon King's favor, and advance further in the Dragon Palace.

At that moment, a demon soldier suddenly came to report, “Your Highness, a group of Buddhist cultivators has arrived outside the formation, claiming they want to enter the mountain.”

Sui Ling was stunned upon hearing this. “Buddhist cultivators? What are they here for? Are they here to convert our Dragon Palace disciples into some kind of Guardian Heavenly Dragons of the Pure Land?”

With this thought, Sui Ling immediately opened the formation gate.

Before long, twenty-four monks with compassionate faces strolled in, the leader having white eyebrows and wearing a golden jade kasaya.

“Amitabha!”

Upon seeing Sui Ling, the leading old monk immediately pressed his palms together and chanted the Buddha's name, then smiled lightly and said, “This humble monk Hui Ku, greets Benefactor Sui Ling.”

“No need for formalities.” Sui Ling waved her hand, staring directly at the old monk, and found that he was only at the peak of the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, which greatly put her at ease.

‘Not a Pure Land Venerable of Grand True Person level, he can't stir up any waves.’

Thinking this, Sui Ling calmed down considerably and asked in a deep voice, “Master has come from afar, may I ask what the purpose is? Is it also for this divine mountain?”

“Not at all.”

Hui Ku shook his head. “We have come by the decree of the Bodhisattva, to respectfully invite the 【Broad Strength Heavenly Dragon Arhat】 to return to his place. Benefactor must not kill him.”

“. What?”

Sui Ling's expression turned angry as she calculated with her fingers. “What 【Broad Strength Heavenly Dragon Arhat】 ? It's clearly that Yuan Tu of the Primordial Saint Sect who killed Sui Ying!”

“You all intend to stop me from avenging my elder brother?”

“Amitabha.” Hui Ku smiled and said, “An eye for an eye will never end. Benefactor is attached to appearances. Could it be that you also wish to come with us to the Pure Land to purify your mind?”

These words instantly sobered Sui Ling, who heard the hidden meaning in Hui Ku's words.

This was clearly telling her to obediently cooperate and hand over Yuan Tu to the Pure Land.

If she refused to comply, she would likely have to follow them to the Pure Land as well, to become a Guardian Heavenly Dragon!

“Forget it.”

With that thought, Sui Ling's tone softened a lot. “Since the Pure Land desires him, so be it. When the time comes, you can make your move yourselves.”

After all, entering the Pure Land was a fate worse than death, which counted as revenge in itself.

Only then did Hui Ku nod in satisfaction.

Next, the twenty-four monks took their positions at one corner of the formation.

Among them, twenty-one were at the peak of Qi Refining, possessing the rank of Guardian Vajra.

Besides Hui Ku, there were also two Arhats at the early Foundation Establishment stage.

At this moment, one Arhat leaned toward Hui Ku and whispered, “Senior Brother, we aren't really going to fight that Yuan Tu, are we?”

Lü Yang was already famous in the inland.

Especially when he publicly surpassed Ye Guyue.

Back then, Hui Ku had witnessed it with his own eyes and remembered it vividly, fully aware of how terrifying this great demon was.

However, despite that, Hui Ku remained calm in the face of the Arhat's lack of confidence.

“Don't worry. This time, it's the Bodhisattva's personal decree. All sides have long reached an agreement. Do you think that Yuan Tu is still the same as before, with someone from the heavens backing him?”

“He's already a fallen phoenix, not even as good as a chicken!”

“Without a True Lord backing him, who can he rely on?”

“Just wait for him to walk right into the trap, let these demons take the hit outside, and we can sit back and reap the benefits!”

After speaking, Hui Ku showed a pleased expression.

After all, he had pulled strings with several Venerables in the Pure Land to secure this chance to make a great achievement.

Meanwhile, outside the 【Overturning Sea】 .

Lü Yang and Suo Huan flew over on their light beams, but they stopped far away, frowning as they looked at the monstrous demon clouds ahead.

Suo Huan then took out the 【Void Sky Mirror】 .

Pointing the mirror toward the distant demon clouds, a divine light emerged, instantly revealing the scene within.

Besides the demonic aura, the dazzling Buddhist light of the Buddhist cultivators was equally glaring.

“It really is the Four Seas Gate.”

Seeing this, Lü Yang shook his head, feeling that the situation was even worse than expected.

The plan to sneak in with his Dharma Body was clearly impossible now.

“Besides that, there are Buddhist cultivators as well.” Suo Huan’s expression also changed as he glanced at Lü Yang and sighed helplessly, “I’m afraid they are here for you, my friend.”

“You really have it rough.”

Lü Yang clasped his hands behind his back and forced a bitter smile at these words.

‘This damned place... I really can’t hide here at all! Why do they have to push me like this?’

For some reason, he suddenly recalled the first few lifetimes, the time when he first faced the Mending Heaven Peak Lord, drew his sword to slash the heavens, but was pressed to death with a single finger.

‘Is this really unavoidable destiny?’

‘But how did Chong Guang manage to endure back then?’

In a flash, the last conversation he had with Chong Guang in the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 resurfaced in his mind.

Back then, he hadn’t thought much of it, but now it struck him deeply:

‘A person must rely on themselves!’

Lü Yang's thoughts spun rapidly.

He first closed his eyes, then opened them again, his gaze turning icy and filled with murderous intent as he looked toward the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

'Yes, I can only rely on myself!'

'I am already a discarded pawn. Only by relying on my own strength to cut down all obstacles, achieving the peak of the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, and using the 【Tribulation Wave】's 【Law Holding】 mystery to preemptively grasp a third innate divine ability, faking the position of Grand True Person, can I hope to break through the current predicament and regain the favor of the True Lord.'

By now, neither he nor Suo Huan had any way to retreat.

All they could do was move forward.

“. So be it.”

With this thought, Lü Yang looked again at the overwhelming demonic aura and dazzling Buddhist light in the distance, revealing a cold grin: “Perfect, no need to distinguish friend from foe—kill them to the fullest!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,407 words ]

Chapter 275: Slashing the Sea!

Kill him to your heart's content!

As Lü Yang's words fell, Suo Huan also looked over, surprised, and said, "As far as I know, fellow Daoist is not one to compete for strength or be adept at combat."

Lü Yang shook his head upon hearing this. "I merely choose not to, not that I cannot."

After speaking, he directly held the 【Tribulation Wave】 inverted behind him and said calmly, "Moreover, with the path ahead and no retreat possible, it's better to fight!"

"Very well, then let's have a battle!"

Suo Huan relaxed his brows and straightened his back. "Leave those below the Grand True Person to me. As for the Grand True Person, fellow Daoist can rest assured and leave them to me."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang glanced at Suo Huan. As a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect, he harbored a degree of suspicion towards everyone. If not for the fact that they were now in the same boat, such harmony would be impossible. However, now, he revealed a rather genuine smile.

"Then I thank fellow Daoist."

"Hahaha!" Suo Huan immediately laughed heartily.

There was one thing Lü Yang did not know. As an outsider cultivator who had endured hardships overseas for six hundred years, he called everyone "fellow Daoist" but had never truly been accepted by others.

He had called many people "fellow Daoist," but no one had ever addressed him as such.

Those with lower cultivation called him "senior," those with equal cultivation called him "wandering cultivator," and those with higher cultivation simply labeled him as "heretic."

Some even directly referred to him as a "parasite."

Therefore, this was the first time.

The first time someone called him "fellow Daoist," which made this once-proud genius, who had been wandering for over six hundred years, feel a rare sense of exhilaration.

More importantly, because they were now in the same boat, there was no need for scheming or guarding against each other. Instead, they could collaborate sincerely, which was a first for both Suo Huan and Lü Yang.

"Boom!"

Suo Huan took the initiative to conceal his figure, leaving Lü Yang alone, holding the 【Tribulation Wave】 inverted. The sea beneath his feet surged, instantly raising waves thousands of feet high.

"Clang clang!"

The 【Tribulation Wave】 in his hand vibrated violently, and within the sword light faintly appeared a young girl, similar to the sword spirit of the previous Abyss Sword, but much larger.

The Abyss Sword was already the most spiritually intelligent among Lü Yang's many spiritual treasures, akin to a real person. Therefore, after being reforged into the 【Tribulation Wave】 , it naturally remained the main spirit. Moreover, due to accommodating many spiritual intelligences, her appearance had changed significantly, becoming more mature.

At this moment, as her figure appeared, she immediately bowed to Lü Yang.

Seeing this, Lü Yang smiled faintly and said softly, "Would you be willing to accompany me?"

"To defeat the enemy for the master."

As her voice fell, the sword spirit quickly merged into the 【Tribulation Wave】 . Lü Yang immediately channeled his mana, drawing the surrounding spiritual tides into the sword!

Almost simultaneously, at the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

".Hmm?"

The Dragon King Sui Ling, who had been meditating, almost immediately sensed the change in the world's spiritual energy. She opened her dragon eyes and looked towards Lü Yang's direction.

She saw Lü Yang releasing his aura without any concealment. A cloud of energy rose above his head, his Dao foundation manifested through the energy, supporting a golden auspicious cloud. Wherever it passed, the sea and mountains inverted, clear energy rolled in the sky, and overwhelming mana spread like thunder across the heavens!

Such momentum was simply terrifying!

This was Lü Yang's first full-force eruption. At this moment, he felt as if he had shed an invisible shackle, feeling unrestrained and truly indulgent.

".It's you!"

Almost simultaneously, Sui Ling recognized Lü Yang and sensed the intense blood energy on him, which belonged to her brother Sui Ying!

"You're the one who killed Sui Ying?"

"The Demon Sect's Yuan Tu?"

Sui Ling let out a long howl, and instantly, 490,000 demon soldiers moved in unison. Rolling demon clouds transformed into a vivid demon dragon, staring directly at Lü Yang.

However, what responded to her was a sword light.

**【Proclaim Might】** !

In the next second, Lü Yang raised the **【Tribulation Wave】** into the air. The mana he had just infused into the sword transformed into a brilliant sword light.

Originally, among the demon soldiers, monks like Hui Ku from the Pure Land, seeing Lü Yang appear so openly, were eager to step forward. But upon seeing the sword light Lü Yang unleashed, they immediately retracted their sleeves and retreated, even hiding their Buddhist light.

Sui Ling naturally saw this scene.

However, as a noble of the dragon race, even though she had heard of the fame of **【Yuan Tu】** , most of it was unsavory, making her think of him as merely a lecher.

What's so formidable about him?

At this moment, she commanded 490,000 demon soldiers, forming a formation to meet the enemy. 490,000 against one, and he's not even a Grand True Person. Could he possibly overturn the heavens?

"Roar—!"

With this thought, Sui Ling directly shook her body, revealing her true form—a long and elegant true dragon coiled at the center of the myriad demon clouds.

The 490,000 demon soldiers formed a formation with seven formation cores. Each core's main formation cultivator was an early Foundation Establishment mixed-blood dragon descendant—be it dragon carp, dragon turtle, dragon tortoise, or dragon horse. At this moment, they all released their auras, surrounding Sui Ling and operating the grand formation beneath them.

**【Heavenly Demon Commanding Sea Grand Formation】** !

In an instant, the entire surrounding **【Overturning Sea】** 's billions of acres of seawater were lifted by an invisible force, forming a sky-covering water curtain!

The heavenly river crossed the sky, and the four seas hung upside down!

Not to mention anything else, just the collapse of these billions of acres of seawater would be enough to crush a continent. If further empowered, it could even kill a Foundation Establishment cultivator.

Clearly, although Sui Ling was internally unconvinced, she did not act carelessly. She went all out from the start. Moreover, this was overseas, her true dragon's domain, allowing her to fully utilize her water-controlling abilities. The billions of acres of seawater condensed into a beam of water light, crashing down like golden mountains and jade pillars.

In response, Lü Yang unleashed a single sword.

This sword was like dividing the void, with flying fire and flowing lightning, slashing upward against the beam of condensed seawater, leaving a brilliant sword light.

"Boom!"

With a deafening roar, the world, which had become indistinguishable between sea and sky under Sui Ling's influence, was now clearly divided by Lü Yang's sword!

On one side of the sword light was the harmony of heaven and earth.

On the other side was a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood!

The 【Heavenly Demon Commanding Sea Grand Formation】 , which Sui Ling had high hopes for, had just been deployed when it was split into pieces by Lü Yang's sword!

Half of the 490,000 demon soldiers were instantly turned to dust by the thunderous sound of the sword light. Another half were swept away by the sword light after the formation was broken, leaving behind a field of broken limbs. The remaining half were hit by the aftermath, each vomiting blood and severely injured, on the brink of death.

As for the seven early Foundation Establishment cultivators?

Four were killed instantly. Of the remaining three, two were beheaded by the sword light, leaving only one who crawled away, bloodied, barely escaping with his life.

"Your Highness! Run..."

Just as the demon creature was about to speak, it seemed to exhale a breath, and a crack appeared on its forehead. Subconsciously wiping it, it found its hand covered in blood.

".Ah?"

Before the words fell, the demon creature shattered into a sky full of blood light.

Only then did Sui Ling finally react. The pungent smell of blood filled her nostrils, making this true dragon noble feel an extreme chill in her heart.

'Impossible!'

She never expected that 490,000 demon soldiers forming a formation, commanding the entire 【Overturning Sea】's seawater, and empowered by position, would end like this.

'Just one sword, how could it be like this?'

From her arranging troops, casting spells to command the sea, Lü Yang had only unleashed one sword. Yet, this one sword could not be stopped by the entire 【Overturning Sea】.

One sword, slashing the sea!

Looking ahead, Sui Ling subconsciously took a step back.

Under the setting sun, Lü Yang held his sword, walking towards her. His dark eyes reflected the mountain of corpses and sea of blood beneath his feet, emitting a faint red glow.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 276 : Dharma Body Captures the Dragon, Breaking Through!**

[ 1,548 words ]

Chapter 276: Dharma Body Captures the Dragon, Breaking Through!

"You, you stay away!"

Seeing Lü Yang approaching step by step, Sui Ling's face showed a mix of shock and anger. Recalling the infamous name of "Yuan Tu," she couldn't help but clench her legs together.

However, Lü Yang had no intention of engaging in idle talk with her.

Forming a hand seal and pointing, the 【Tribulation Wave】 behind him immediately transformed into a brilliant sword light, flying straight towards the dragon girl.

Sui Ling gritted her teeth upon seeing this and reverted to her human form. After all, her original dragon form was too massive, making her an easy target for the flying sword. She then took out a luminous pearl and placed it above her head, from which countless moonlights cascaded down, forming a canopy that enveloped her.

This item was called the \[Moon Tassel Pearl], a gift from Tian Qiu.

The myriad moonlights from the pearl appeared delicate but were actually as solid as gold and iron. For a moment, they withstood the slashing of the \[Tribulation Wave], causing sparks to fly.

Seeing this, Sui Ling was initially stunned, then showed a look of joy: "So that's it, you can't unleash a second sword!"

She had just been terrified, thinking that every sword from Lü Yang was of such caliber, almost mistaking him for a grand True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect!

Lü Yang, upon seeing this, merely gave a cold smile. Indeed, that sword wasn't casually unleashed; it utilized the fourth mystical ability of the \[Tribulation Wave], \[Proclaiming Might], combined with his profound mana. After accumulating power for a while, he executed the slash, which couldn't be easily replicated in a short time.

But so what?

"Does Fellow Daoist think I need that sword to slay you?"

As Lü Yang's words fell, his hand seals changed, and the singular brilliant sword light suddenly split, transforming into hundreds of sword lights with a few flickers!

\[Lost Magnetic Union]!

This was originally a divine ability Lü Yang could only refine upon reaching the mid-stage consummation, and it was the primary purpose of his journey to the Magnetic Divine Mountain. Now, he had prematurely evolved it!

In an instant, each of the sword lights he had split emitted a unique magnetic force, transforming into \[Magnetic Union Divine Lights], breaking through the five elements. Just a sweep over Sui Ling's \[Moon Tassel Pearl] stripped away the myriad moonlights like peeling a shell!

Sui Ling was immediately horrified and hastily activated her divine ability.

\[Heavenly River Mouth]!

In the next moment, a dragon head manifested by Sui Ling's spell appeared, sucking in Lü Yang's sword lights with great force, swallowing them all!

The same divine ability, when wielded by different cultivators, varies based on their cultivation.

When performed by Sui Ying, the [Heavenly River Mouth] was an offensive technique that projected the heavenly river. But now, under Sui Ling's control, it became a suppressive and sealing divine ability.

According to her plan, after swallowing these sword lights, they would be submerged in the heavenly river within her abdomen, aligning with the [Water Cold Metal Chill] phenomenon, specifically countering the metallic aura of flying swords. No matter how mystical the sword, it would suffer from submersion, turning into scrap metal in no time.

However, in the next second, Sui Ling's expression changed.

Because at this moment, Lü Yang's magic sword, after being swallowed by her [Heavenly River Mouth], not only didn't submerge but became even more violent.

The magic sword rampaged within her abdomen, moving up and down.

For a moment, Sui Ling felt intense abdominal pain until a sword tip pierced through her body, forcing her to raise her neck and let out a long howl.

"Roar——!"

The delicate girl was pierced through by Lü Yang's magic sword, disappearing on the spot, replaced by a towering true dragon diving towards the sea.

She intended to escape!

However, upon seeing this, Lü Yang laughed: "Trying to flee?"

As his words fell, a mass of mysterious fire suddenly rose behind him, the flames blazing, illuminating a majestic phantom with three heads and six arms, a blue face, and fangs.

Immediately, this phantom took a step forward, instantly becoming solid. The mysterious fire burned into a ring behind its head, reflecting countless circular lights. The six arms each grabbed a part of Sui Ling's true dragon form—neck, vital point, spine, tail—pinning her firmly in mid-air!

[Heavenly Firmament's All-Encompassing Dharma Body]!

This was the first time Lü Yang had displayed this second-grade true skill after mastering it. It was truly unparalleled in might, suppressing the true dragon with sheer brute force!

Next, Lü Yang gathered qi in his chest and shouted: "Freeze!"

The marvel of the Dharma body, \[Heavenly Firmament]!

Innate divine ability, \[Discern Right from Wrong]!

The combination of the two resulted in an effect akin to words becoming law. With a single word, Sui Ling's struggling dragon body was forcibly immobilized.

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang's Dharma body suddenly spread its arms.

"Rip!"

Accompanied by the sound of flesh tearing, the six arms simultaneously pulled in different directions, directly tearing Sui Ling into six pieces on the spot!

"Ah!"

The excruciating pain of her destroyed Dharma body made Sui Ling scream miserably. Without hesitation, in the next second, her dragon scales shattered, and a massive blood light exploded. She decisively detonated her entire dragon body, covering her soul's escape as it turned into light, attempting to merge into the sea and escape through water.

Then, almost simultaneously, Lü Yang's Dharma body opened its eyes.

\[All-Encompassing]!

This mystical Dharma body could capture souls and thoughts, specifically countering spirits. Now, as he activated it, he merely opened his mouth and sucked towards Sui Ling's soul from afar.

"Whoosh whoosh!"

In an instant, Sui Ling felt a wave of dizziness. Without the protection of her physical body, her soul was as fragile as a mayfly, now filled with immense fear.

'He wants to kill me!? He really dares to kill me!?'

Sui Ying was one thing, having ventured inland on his own, far from the dragon palace's reach.

But this place was right before the Four Seas Sect! The dragon palace was nearby, and as a noble true dragon, Lü Yang actually dared to kill her under the dragon palace's nose?

"Wait, wait..."

Fearing that Lü Yang might not understand the situation, Sui Ling hurriedly tried to explain loudly. However, Lü Yang gave her no chance, his large hand crashing down.

"Boom!"

With a loud bang, the entire world seemed to fall silent for a moment. The remaining demon soldiers and the hiding Buddhist cultivators all looked up, seeing Lü Yang standing tall in the sky, his Dharma body blazing. A massive true dragon corpse, as large as a mountain, was held in his hand, lifeless.

"...Dead?"

Among the Buddhist cultivators, Hui Ku opened his mouth, almost unable to believe it: "A mid-Foundation Establishment true dragon, just got torn apart alive by that demon?"

But he quickly regained composure, even showing some excitement.

"Good, good, good. Unexpectedly, he refined such a ferocious Dharma body. He should enter our Pure Land to cleanse his hostility and achieve true enlightenment."

Boom!

At this moment, a thunderous roar came from afar, accompanied by an angry dragon roar: "Demon... you've gone too far!"

However, in the next second, a loud laugh suppressed the voice:

"Fellow Daoist, why the rush? We haven't finished our duel yet!"

It was Suo Huan.

This grand True Person, who had hidden overseas for six hundred years, actually kept his promise and truly blocked the late-stage and even consummate Foundation Establishment grand True Persons for Lü Yang!

But this was just the beginning.

Lü Yang retracted his Dharma body, took out the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, threw Sui Ling's corpse into it, operated his mana for a moment, and then gently shook the banner.

In the next second, Sui Ling emerged from the banner, fully intact, in human form, respectfully bowing to Lü Yang. The previous hatred and anger seemed to have never existed, replaced entirely by endless loyalty: "Sui Ling greets Master."

Not only Sui Ling.

Including the seven early-Foundation Establishment demon clans he had just slain with a single sword, their mangled corpses and souls were all collected into the banner by Lü Yang.

Then, holding the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, Lü Yang calmly landed on the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

Despite killing Sui Ling and breaking the 470,000 demon soldiers' formation, he felt no relaxation in his heart.

Because he knew very well that the overseas demon clans were just extras. Those who truly sought his life and cultivation were still hiding in the shadows, waiting for the right moment.

"They're waiting for me to start breaking through..."

Refining the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, condensing divine abilities, was originally a significant task requiring a peaceful environment. But now, no one would give him the chance to refine slowly.

If he began refining, those lurking in the shadows would immediately emerge to take his life.

But if he didn't refine and break through, he couldn't escape this deadlock.

'Pure Land, Dao Court, Sword Pavilion... all probably see me as a dish, just waiting to divide and consume me. The Primordial Saint Sect even treats me as a discarded pawn.'

Even killing Sui Ling and the demon soldiers aligned perfectly with the major powers' interests.

'But soon, they'll regret it.'

Seven early-Foundation Establishment, one mid-Foundation Establishment.

Adding the existing Chen Xin'an in the banner, even excluding the pseudo-Foundation Establishment Su Nu, he now had nine Foundation Establishment banner spirits!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang gave a cold smile, then, without hesitation, sat under the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner and began refining the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,437 words ]

## Chapter 277: Sharing Yuan Tu?

The Magnetic God Mountain radiated with multicolored lights.

This divine mountain was unlike ordinary objects; it was formed after a True Person's death, when their cave heaven merged into the world, stripping away its original attributes.

It was known that every True Person's cave heaven corresponded to a specific fruit position; thus, a cave heaven fragment generated by the heavens without any specific orientation was incredibly rare and unbelievable.

Not to mention, its ability to assist cultivators in ascending to blessed lands and seeking the golden position was something other cave heavens couldn't achieve.

Otherwise, why would the eldest prince of the Dragon Palace, Tian Qiu, focus on this?

If any cave heaven could assist in seeking the golden position, with his status, he could directly break through in the Dragon Lord's cave heaven, without such trouble.

However, this divine mountain was currently of no use to Lü Yang.

What he needed was merely the Earthly Fiend [Yin Wood Qi] derived from the divine mountain; if not for this, he wouldn't have collaborated so sincerely with Suo Huan.

This fact was also known to everyone.

Almost at the moment Lü Yang entered meditation, outside the divine mountain, Hui Ku and a group of Buddhist cultivators who had previously hidden using spiritual treasures revealed themselves.

"Amitabha!"

These Buddhist cultivators now all wore joyful expressions, and Hui Ku laughed heartily: "Donor Yuan Tu, today you should meet your tribulation and enter my Pure Land!"

As his words fell, the group of Buddhist cultivators immediately formed hand seals and chanted the Buddha's name: "We respectfully invite the [Guangli Tianlong Temple]!"

With these words, a vast Buddhist light suddenly rose within the Foundation Establishment Realm, revealing a majestic temple supported by auspicious clouds, with a golden statue standing inside.

If Lü Yang had not entered meditation and was refining the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend, he would have recognized this temple as the former [Fulong Temple], albeit with a new appearance, and the golden statue inside was no longer the Fulong Arhat but a Buddha identical in appearance to Lü Yang.

"Hahaha!"

Only then did Hui Ku finally laugh out loud, feeling that the suffocating fear from being scared by Lü Yang's sword earlier had finally dissipated somewhat.

No matter how high your divine abilities, so what?

Aren't you still going to surrender?

Indeed, in Hui Ku's view, Lü Yang had already resigned himself to fate, planning to surrender, as there was no resistance during the refinement of the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend.

"At least he knows what's good for him."

"Otherwise, if a real fight broke out, it wouldn't end without casualties. Now that this demon is willing to surrender, it's a great merit."

As he thought about it, Hui Ku even felt a bit envious. With Lü Yang's cultivation, after refining the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend and achieving mid-Foundation Establishment perfection, entering Buddhism and taking the position of [Guangli Tianlong Arhat], he would be not far from becoming a Pure Land Venerable of the Great True Person level.

Although by then, there would be no more Lü Yang.

Thinking of this, Hui Ku couldn't help but grin, and the twenty-three Buddhist cultivators behind him also showed similar smiles.

However, at this moment.

"An imperial decree arrives!"

A loud shout came from the distant sky, and in an instant, a mighty force dispersed the Pure Land's Buddhist light. Looking up, it was a long carriage.

"Hmm? Dao Court?"

Hui Ku frowned at the sight but said nothing; the Bodhisattvas in the Pure Land had already instructed him beforehand that the Dao Court also wanted a share.

Soon, several Dao Court Dutian Division guards arrived.

The leader was an old acquaintance, a high-ranking official of the Dao Court who had previously appeared in the [Dongyang Blessed Land] seeking treasures, just like Hui Ku.

[Dutian Division Commander] Hou Lan.

[Administrative Division Minister] Cheng Tinggui.

At this moment, the two of them jointly held a golden scroll and solemnly said: "By His Majesty's decree, we summon Lü Yang from Jiangbei to serve as an official, granting him a top third-rank position!"

Hui Ku was indifferent upon hearing this.

The Pure Land and Dao Court had already agreed beforehand: the Pure Land would take Lü Yang's Dao foundation, Dharma body, and cultivation, while the Dao Court would take his soul.

The Pure Land intended to use Lü Yang's cultivation to activate the [City Wall Earth], while the Dao Court planned to have Lü Yang, the only current practitioner of [City Wall Earth], serve as an official, bowing and submitting, thereby seizing its imagery and usurping the position of Earth Element Supreme.

The two did not conflict.

Therefore, upon meeting, there was no tension between the parties; instead, they were harmonious, presenting a scene where everyone was pleased.

After a while, another sword light flew in.

"The Sword Pavilion has arrived!"

Hui Ku laughed, and as the sword light approached, a handsome young man stepped out, his sharp gaze immediately falling on Lü Yang.

This operation to sweep the overseas area involved the Pure Land, Dao Court, and Holy Sect, and had nothing to do with the Sword Pavilion. However, once Lü Yang got involved, the Sword Pavilion couldn't sit still, especially the Ye family, direct descendants of a former True Person, who hated Lü Yang to the bone and wished to kill him.

"I am Ye Tao."

The young man cupped his hands towards the Pure Land and Dao Court, then looked at the [Tribulation Wave] beside Lü Yang and said solemnly: "I have come for this sword."

"This demon is of humble origin, with no notable background in previous lives. Such a divine sword in his hands is like a pearl covered in dust."

"Our Sword Pavilion will take it in and select a disciple with a distinguished background and extraordinary past life to bestow it upon, so that this sword can shine as it should."

Even the candidate had been decided.

It was the [Chengtian Zhengde True Person], who would reincarnate and return decades later; otherwise, Ye Tao, as an elder of the Ye family, wouldn't have come personally.

"Good!"

Hui Ku smiled at this but didn't mind; although the [Tribulation Wave] was indeed a fine sword, the Pure Land had few sword cultivators and thus didn't care much about it.

Meanwhile, Hou Lan of the Dao Court looked around and asked curiously:

"Isn't the Demon Sect sending anyone?"

Hui Ku shook his head: "Their main focus is on Suo Huan. If we take more here, we'll have to give them a larger share over there."

"Is that so." Cheng Tinggui nodded upon hearing this and continued, "Since everyone is here, let's proceed. Better to finish early than let dreams linger."

After speaking, everyone looked towards Lü Yang on the mountain.

The next second, as the Myriad Spirits Banner beside him swayed, numerous banner spirits emerged, radiating their auras—surprisingly, the seven Foundation Establishment beasts from earlier.

However, no one paid them any mind.

Among those present—Ye Tao, Hui Ku, Hou Lan, and Cheng Tinggui—who wasn't at mid-stage cultivation? Seven early-stage Foundation Establishment beings were no more than mere chickens and dogs to them.

"I'll go first!"

Hou Lan sneered coldly, immediately raising his official position. The talisman script of the [Dutian Division Commander] emitted a glow, shining towards Lü Yang's direction.

But in the next second—

"Ah!"

Hou Lan, charging at the front, suddenly halted. A scream filled with terror caused Hui Ku and the others, who were about to advance, to stop in their tracks.

What happened?

Then they saw it—from the Myriad Spirits Banner, a hand suddenly reached out of thin air, carrying overwhelming Yin Fiend energy, directly gripping Hou Lan's neck!

Without any pause, the hand gave a slight twist, snapping Hou Lan's neck as easily as breaking a twig. The boundless Yin Fiend energy quickly enveloped Hou Lan like a spider web, transforming into blazing Fiend Fire, instantly reducing him to ashes!

"Impossible!"

Witnessing this scene, Cheng Tinggui, also from the Dao Court, was the first to exclaim in shock. Hui Ku and Ye Tao also showed expressions of astonishment.

Indeed, the Dao Court cultivators were somewhat weaker.

However, no matter how weak, they were still of the proper third rank, comparable to mid-stage Foundation Establishment. How could he be crushed to death by a single hand? Could it be that Lü Yang was still awake?

Soon, they saw the owner of the hand.

"Old now, not as effective."

The Myriad Spirits Banner fluttered as a figure strolled out, rubbing his shoulder and sighing, "In the past, just a glare from me would have killed him."

Saying such words, the one who emerged was a handsome young man.

Hui Ku and Cheng Tinggui didn't recognize him.

Only Ye Tao, looking at his appearance, seemed to recall something. His eyes suddenly widened as he said, "You are... that remnant of the Witch Ghost Path, Ting You!?"

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Ting You immediately turned his gaze:

"Who are you calling a remnant?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,328 words ]

Chapter 278: The Might of Ancestor Tingyou!

"Sss!"

At the very moment Ancestor Tingyou cast his gaze over, Ye Tao from the Sword Pavilion felt a chill surge straight to his crown, his eyes filled with dread.

Ancestor Tingyou!

This was precisely why Lü Yang chose not to offer the slain Foundation Establishment realm demon clan members to his sword, but instead absorbed them into the Myriad Spirits Banner, transforming them into banner spirits.

To be fair, Ancestor Tingyou was no longer what he once was. After escaping from the hands of a True Lord, he had barely survived through five lifetimes, exhausting his former foundations. Even if he wished to engage in magical duels, he was powerless, only capable of bullying the likes of Lü Yang, who was merely a Qi Refining junior back then.

However, this deficiency was not entirely irremediable.

【Yama Hall】 !

This secret technique, once considered Lü Yang's trump card, was the very reason he dared to enter meditation under the watchful eyes of all, focusing solely on refining the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.

"Lü Yang... this lad's cultivation is still lacking."

Ancestor Tingyou sighed, "The most crucial aspect of the 【Yama Hall】 is the balance of cultivation levels. Why has he gathered eight early Foundation Establishment cultivators and one at mid-Foundation Establishment?"

Seven demon clan members at early Foundation Establishment, plus Chen Xin'an.

And Sui Ling at mid-Foundation Establishment.

At this moment, these nine banner spirits stood behind Ancestor Tingyou, their forms gradually blurring, transforming into a majestic hall, presenting various scenes of Yama.

The Impermanence seeking lives, ghost messengers fetching souls.

Judges rewarding and punishing, wandering gods patrolling the heavens.

"Moreover, the support of the earth veins is lacking... forget it."

Ancestor Tingyou appeared indifferent, calculating with his fingers, then shook his head, "I'll make some slight modifications to the secret technique; it should be barely usable."

With this thought, the previously discordant nine banner spirits immediately underwent changes. Sui Ling's aura at mid-Foundation Establishment suddenly plummeted, while the other eight banner spirits simultaneously surged in aura. Through this mutual adjustment, balance was reestablished, leaving no gaps.

"Boom!"

In the next second, the fully formed 【Yama Hall】 opened and closed its doors. Instantly, everyone present felt a dizzying spin before their eyes.

By the time they regained their senses, they had already fallen into the 【Yama Hall】 !

"Amitabha..."

Amidst the rolling Yin Fiend, Hui Ku was not alarmed but delighted. After all, his Pure Land was most adept at dealing with such evil entities. At this moment, he became much more composed.

Thinking of this, he immediately chanted a Buddhist mantra, "Demon!"

As his words fell, Hui Ku opened his mouth and exhaled a mouthful of crimson flames, accompanied by a surging heatwave, instantly sweeping across half of the 【Yama Hall】 .

This fire was called the 【World-Purifying Karma Fire】 .

As the name implied, this fire specifically targeted Yin Fiend and karmic obstacles. Any evil entity touched by this fire would immediately become its fuel, unable to extricate themselves.

However, upon seeing this, Ancestor Tingyou merely glanced and sneered coldly. In the next second, the originally pervasive Yin Fiend energy abruptly transformed, revealing rays of heavenly light, upright and grand, converting from Yin Fiend to Yang Gang, directly extinguishing the Karma Fire as if Mount Tai had pressed down upon it!

Such a scene left Hui Ku dumbfounded:

"What is this!?"

Perfectly fine Yin Fiend, how did it suddenly turn into Yang Gang? How could Yin and Yang reverse? Even if possible, why had he never heard of it before?

In truth, he couldn't be blamed.

After all, this technique was something Ancestor Tingyou comprehended after personally observing Chong Guang seeking gold and witnessing him reverse the world's earthly elements.

"Unfortunately, it's not as good as the original."

Ancestor Tingyou shook his head, "Reversing Yin Fiend is already my limit. To reverse the attributes of Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend requires a Fruit Position."

"But to deal with you bald donkeys, it's sufficient."

In the next second, countless ferocious ghosts emerged from the 【Yama Hall】 . However, now they were clad in Yang Gang, appearing like heavenly soldiers and generals.

"Kill!"

The soldiers and generals swarmed forward, instantly engulfing Hui Ku. Hui Ku, while fending off in a fluster, turned to look at Cheng Tinggui beside him:

"Isn't this false position technique from your Dao Court?"

"Quickly break it!"

"I..."

Cheng Tinggui's face turned red. He had long been trying to find a flaw in the 【Yama Hall】 , but to his dismay, although this secret technique was derived from their Dao Court's official position false-holding technique, as a local cultivator of the Dao Court, he couldn't find a single flaw in the 【Yama Hall】 !

'...How is this possible!'

Cheng Tinggui was dumbfounded. Even when he occasionally discovered a flaw, Ancestor Tingyou merely glanced at him and easily patched it up!

'How can we fight this!?'

At this moment, a sword cry sounded:

It was Ye Tao making a move. He looked solemnly at Ancestor Tingyou, "I didn't expect you, this remnant, to still be alive. This time, you must not be spared!"

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Tingyou raised an eyebrow, "...Still dare to call me a remnant?"

In the next second, Ancestor Tingyou's figure disappeared from the original spot. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Ye Tao, a large hand grabbing fiercely!

"Slash!"

Seeing this, Ye Tao immediately activated his sword pill to strike. However, to his shock, his sword pill was actually caught by Ancestor Tingyou!

Infinite sword light burst forth, yet it couldn't tear apart Ancestor Tingyou's palm. Instead, it was entirely absorbed by him. The sword pill, which should have been capable of cutting through anything, now seemed like a harmless jade bead in his hand. With just two fingers, it suddenly emitted crackling explosive sounds!

"Demon, what kind of evil technique is this!?"

Ye Tao's eyes were bloodshot. This sword pill was tied to his cultivation and essence. If it were damaged, he himself would suffer significant harm!

"Wait... something's not right!"

"I seem to have not used the sword technique just now? Nor any divine abilities?" Ye Tao's thoughts cleared, and he was terrified to realize the foolish act he had committed.

Ancestor Tingyou certainly couldn't crush the sword pill by hand.

In fact, it was he himself who handed the sword pill to him!

But why would this happen?

While Ye Tao was still in shock, Ancestor Tingyou sighed:

"Unfortunately, even within the 【Yama Hall】 , I can only perform simple imitations. I have yet to comprehend its mysteries. It truly is related to the Fruit Position?"

He was imitating the 【Knowledge Obstruction】 .

As a banner spirit of the Myriad Spirits Banner, he had witnessed everything Lü Yang experienced, naturally having ample time and opportunity to comprehend such a wondrous technique.

As a result, he did achieve some success!

After all, back then, the Witch Ghost Path was merely a small sect. Even the great divine ability used to break through Foundation Establishment was singular. What did Ancestor Tingyou rely on to duel with Foundation Establishment cultivators?

He relied on his comprehension!

Comprehending others' innate divine abilities and talent divine abilities, using spells to imitate and utilize them, turning decay into magic. This was a technique only Ancestor Tingyou possessed!

"Crack!"

In the next second, Ancestor Tingyou directly crushed Ye Tao's sword pill. This mid-Foundation Establishment sword cultivator immediately vomited blood, his aura suddenly weakening.

On the other side, Hui Ku and Cheng Tinggui were also struggling to fight back.

Even if it was merely using the 【Yama Hall】 to falsely hold the mid-Foundation Establishment position, still fighting three opponents alone, Ancestor Tingyou managed to firmly hold the upper hand!

Such combat power was only slightly inferior to Lü Yang.

If Lü Yang possessed such combat power due to the 【Tribulation Wave】 , second-grade true skills, and numerous components stacking up massive stats.

Then Ancestor Tingyou was much simpler.

His magical duels relied entirely on talent!

However, at this moment.

"Amitabha!"

Suddenly, a thunderous Buddhist chant resounded from outside the 【Yama Hall】 . Then, from within the clouds, a giant hand descended out of thin air.

"Boom!"

With just this strike, the 【Yama Hall】 , which could trap three mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators, was directly torn apart. Upon seeing this, Ancestor Tingyou immediately narrowed his eyes:

"Great True Person"

The first to lose patience, in the end, was still the Pure Land!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 277: Sharing Yuan Tu?

The Magnetic God Mountain radiated with multicolored lights.

This divine mountain was unlike ordinary objects; it was formed after a True Person's death, when their cave heaven merged into the world, stripping away its original attributes.

It was known that every True Person's cave heaven corresponded to a specific fruit position; thus, a cave heaven fragment generated by the heavens without any specific orientation was incredibly rare and unbelievable.

Not to mention, its ability to assist cultivators in ascending to blessed lands and seeking the golden position was something other cave heavens couldn't achieve.

Otherwise, why would the eldest prince of the Dragon Palace, Tian Qiu, focus on this?

If any cave heaven could assist in seeking the golden position, with his status, he could directly break through in the Dragon Lord's cave heaven, without such trouble.

However, this divine mountain was currently of no use to Lü Yang.

What he needed was merely the Earthly Fiend [Yin Wood Qi] derived from the divine mountain; if not for this, he wouldn't have collaborated so sincerely with Suo Huan.

This fact was also known to everyone.

Almost at the moment Lü Yang entered meditation, outside the divine mountain, Hui Ku and a group of Buddhist cultivators who had previously hidden using spiritual treasures revealed themselves.

"Amitabha!"

These Buddhist cultivators now all wore joyful expressions, and Hui Ku laughed heartily: "Donor Yuan Tu, today you should meet your tribulation and enter my Pure Land!"

As his words fell, the group of Buddhist cultivators immediately formed hand seals and chanted the Buddha's name: "We respectfully invite the [Guangli Tianlong Temple]!"

With these words, a vast Buddhist light suddenly rose within the Foundation Establishment Realm, revealing a majestic temple supported by auspicious clouds, with a golden statue standing inside.

If Lü Yang had not entered meditation and was refining the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend, he would have recognized this temple as the former [Fulong Temple], albeit with a new appearance, and the golden statue inside was no longer the Fulong Arhat but a Buddha identical in appearance to Lü Yang.

"Hahaha!"

Only then did Hui Ku finally laugh out loud, feeling that the suffocating fear from being scared by Lü Yang's sword earlier had finally dissipated somewhat.

No matter how high your divine abilities, so what?

Aren't you still going to surrender?

Indeed, in Hui Ku's view, Lü Yang had already resigned himself to fate, planning to surrender, as there was no resistance during the refinement of the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend.

"At least he knows what's good for him."

"Otherwise, if a real fight broke out, it wouldn't end without casualties. Now that this demon is willing to surrender, it's a great merit."

As he thought about it, Hui Ku even felt a bit envious. With Lü Yang's cultivation, after refining the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend and achieving mid-Foundation Establishment perfection, entering Buddhism and taking the position of [Guangli Tianlong Arhat], he would be not far from becoming a Pure Land Venerable of the Great True Person level.

Although by then, there would be no more Lü Yang.

Thinking of this, Hui Ku couldn't help but grin, and the twenty-three Buddhist cultivators behind him also showed similar smiles.

However, at this moment.

"An imperial decree arrives!"

A loud shout came from the distant sky, and in an instant, a mighty force dispersed the Pure Land's Buddhist light. Looking up, it was a long carriage.

"Hmm? Dao Court?"

Hui Ku frowned at the sight but said nothing; the Bodhisattvas in the Pure Land had already instructed him beforehand that the Dao Court also wanted a share.

Soon, several Dao Court Dutian Division guards arrived.

The leader was an old acquaintance, a high-ranking official of the Dao Court who had previously appeared in the [Dongyang Blessed Land] seeking treasures, just like Hui Ku.

[Dutian Division Commander] Hou Lan.

[Administrative Division Minister] Cheng Tinggui.

At this moment, the two of them jointly held a golden scroll and solemnly said: "By His Majesty's decree, we summon Lü Yang from Jiangbei to serve as an official, granting him a top third-rank position!"

Hui Ku was indifferent upon hearing this.

The Pure Land and Dao Court had already agreed beforehand: the Pure Land would take Lü Yang's Dao foundation, Dharma body, and cultivation, while the Dao Court would take his soul.

The Pure Land intended to use Lü Yang's cultivation to activate the [City Wall Earth], while the Dao Court planned to have Lü Yang, the only current practitioner of [City Wall Earth], serve as an official, bowing and submitting, thereby seizing its imagery and usurping the position of Earth Element Supreme.

The two did not conflict.

Therefore, upon meeting, there was no tension between the parties; instead, they were harmonious, presenting a scene where everyone was pleased.

After a while, another sword light flew in.

"The Sword Pavilion has arrived!"

Hui Ku laughed, and as the sword light approached, a handsome young man stepped out, his sharp gaze immediately falling on Lü Yang.

This operation to sweep the overseas area involved the Pure Land, Dao Court, and Holy Sect, and had nothing to do with the Sword Pavilion. However, once Lü Yang got involved, the Sword Pavilion couldn't sit still, especially the Ye family, direct descendants of a former True Person, who hated Lü Yang to the bone and wished to kill him.

"I am Ye Tao."

The young man cupped his hands towards the Pure Land and Dao Court, then looked at the [Tribulation Wave] beside Lü Yang and said solemnly: "I have come for this sword."

"This demon is of humble origin, with no notable background in previous lives. Such a divine sword in his hands is like a pearl covered in dust."

"Our Sword Pavilion will take it in and select a disciple with a distinguished background and extraordinary past life to bestow it upon, so that this sword can shine as it should."

Even the candidate had been decided.

It was the [Chengtian Zhengde True Person], who would reincarnate and return decades later; otherwise, Ye Tao, as an elder of the Ye family, wouldn't have come personally.

"Good!"

Hui Ku smiled at this but didn't mind; although the [Tribulation Wave] was indeed a fine sword, the Pure Land had few sword cultivators and thus didn't care much about it.

Meanwhile, Hou Lan of the Dao Court looked around and asked curiously:

"Isn't the Demon Sect sending anyone?"

Hui Ku shook his head: "Their main focus is on Suo Huan. If we take more here, we'll have to give them a larger share over there."

"Is that so." Cheng Tinggui nodded upon hearing this and continued, "Since everyone is here, let's proceed. Better to finish early than let dreams linger."

After speaking, everyone looked towards Lü Yang on the mountain.

The next second, as the Myriad Spirits Banner beside him swayed, numerous banner spirits emerged, radiating their auras—surprisingly, the seven Foundation Establishment beasts from earlier.

However, no one paid them any mind.

Among those present—Ye Tao, Hui Ku, Hou Lan, and Cheng Tinggui—who wasn't at mid-stage cultivation? Seven early-stage Foundation Establishment beings were no more than mere chickens and dogs to them.

"I'll go first!"

Hou Lan sneered coldly, immediately raising his official position. The talisman script of the [Dutian Division Commander] emitted a glow, shining towards Lü Yang's direction.

But in the next second—

"Ah!"

Hou Lan, charging at the front, suddenly halted. A scream filled with terror caused Hui Ku and the others, who were about to advance, to stop in their tracks.

What happened?

Then they saw it—from the Myriad Spirits Banner, a hand suddenly reached out of thin air, carrying overwhelming Yin Fiend energy, directly gripping Hou Lan's neck!

Without any pause, the hand gave a slight twist, snapping Hou Lan's neck as easily as breaking a twig. The boundless Yin Fiend energy quickly enveloped Hou Lan like a spider web, transforming into blazing Fiend Fire, instantly reducing him to ashes!

"Impossible!"

Witnessing this scene, Cheng Tinggui, also from the Dao Court, was the first to exclaim in shock. Hui Ku and Ye Tao also showed expressions of astonishment.

Indeed, the Dao Court cultivators were somewhat weaker.

However, no matter how weak, they were still of the proper third rank, comparable to mid-stage Foundation Establishment. How could he be crushed to death by a single hand? Could it be that Lü Yang was still awake?

Soon, they saw the owner of the hand.

"Old now, not as effective."

The Myriad Spirits Banner fluttered as a figure strolled out, rubbing his shoulder and sighing, "In the past, just a glare from me would have killed him."

Saying such words, the one who emerged was a handsome young man.

Hui Ku and Cheng Tinggui didn't recognize him.

Only Ye Tao, looking at his appearance, seemed to recall something. His eyes suddenly widened as he said, "You are... that remnant of the Witch Ghost Path, Ting You!?"

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Ting You immediately turned his gaze:

"Who are you calling a remnant?"

## Chapter 278: The Might of Ancestor Tingyou!

"Sss!"

At the very moment Ancestor Tingyou cast his gaze over, Ye Tao from the Sword Pavilion felt a chill surge straight to his crown, his eyes filled with dread.

Ancestor Tingyou!

This was precisely why Lü Yang chose not to offer the slain Foundation Establishment realm demon clan members to his sword, but instead absorbed them into the Myriad Spirits Banner, transforming them into banner spirits.

To be fair, Ancestor Tingyou was no longer what he once was. After escaping from the hands of a True Lord, he had barely survived through five lifetimes, exhausting his former foundations. Even if he wished to engage in magical duels, he was powerless, only capable of bullying the likes of Lü Yang, who was merely a Qi Refining junior back then.

However, this deficiency was not entirely irremediable.

【Yama Hall】 !

This secret technique, once considered Lü Yang's trump card, was the very reason he dared to enter meditation under the watchful eyes of all, focusing solely on refining the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.

"Lü Yang... this lad's cultivation is still lacking."

Ancestor Tingyou sighed, "The most crucial aspect of the 【Yama Hall】 is the balance of cultivation levels. Why has he gathered eight early Foundation Establishment cultivators and one at mid-Foundation Establishment?"

Seven demon clan members at early Foundation Establishment, plus Chen Xin'an.

And Sui Ling at mid-Foundation Establishment.

At this moment, these nine banner spirits stood behind Ancestor Tingyou, their forms gradually blurring, transforming into a majestic hall, presenting various scenes of Yama.

The Impermanence seeking lives, ghost messengers fetching souls.

Judges rewarding and punishing, wandering gods patrolling the heavens.

"Moreover, the support of the earth veins is lacking... forget it."

Ancestor Tingyou appeared indifferent, calculating with his fingers, then shook his head, "I'll make some slight modifications to the secret technique; it should be barely usable."

With this thought, the previously discordant nine banner spirits immediately underwent changes. Sui Ling's aura at mid-Foundation Establishment suddenly plummeted, while the other eight banner spirits simultaneously surged in aura. Through this mutual adjustment, balance was reestablished, leaving no gaps.

"Boom!"

In the next second, the fully formed 【Yama Hall】 opened and closed its doors. Instantly, everyone present felt a dizzying spin before their eyes.

By the time they regained their senses, they had already fallen into the 【Yama Hall】 !

"Amitabha..."

Amidst the rolling Yin Fiend, Hui Ku was not alarmed but delighted. After all, his Pure Land was most adept at dealing with such evil entities. At this moment, he became much more composed.

Thinking of this, he immediately chanted a Buddhist mantra, "Demon!"

As his words fell, Hui Ku opened his mouth and exhaled a mouthful of crimson flames, accompanied by a surging heatwave, instantly sweeping across half of the 【Yama Hall】 .

This fire was called the 【World-Purifying Karma Fire】 .

As the name implied, this fire specifically targeted Yin Fiend and karmic obstacles. Any evil entity touched by this fire would immediately become its fuel, unable to extricate themselves.

However, upon seeing this, Ancestor Tingyou merely glanced and sneered coldly. In the next second, the originally pervasive Yin Fiend energy abruptly transformed, revealing rays of heavenly light, upright and grand, converting from Yin Fiend to Yang Gang, directly extinguishing the Karma Fire as if Mount Tai had pressed down upon it!

Such a scene left Hui Ku dumbfounded:

"What is this!?"

Perfectly fine Yin Fiend, how did it suddenly turn into Yang Gang? How could Yin and Yang reverse? Even if possible, why had he never heard of it before?

In truth, he couldn't be blamed.

After all, this technique was something Ancestor Tingyou comprehended after personally observing Chong Guang seeking gold and witnessing him reverse the world's earthly elements.

"Unfortunately, it's not as good as the original."

Ancestor Tingyou shook his head, "Reversing Yin Fiend is already my limit. To reverse the attributes of Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend requires a Fruit Position."

"But to deal with you bald donkeys, it's sufficient."

In the next second, countless ferocious ghosts emerged from the 【Yama Hall】. However, now they were clad in Yang Gang, appearing like heavenly soldiers and generals.

"Kill!"

The soldiers and generals swarmed forward, instantly engulfing Hui Ku. Hui Ku, while fending off in a fluster, turned to look at Cheng Tinggui beside him:

"Isn't this false position technique from your Dao Court?"

"Quickly break it!"

"I..."

Cheng Tinggui's face turned red. He had long been trying to find a flaw in the 【Yama Hall】 , but to his dismay, although this secret technique was derived from their Dao Court's official position false-holding technique, as a local cultivator of the Dao Court, he couldn't find a single flaw in the 【Yama Hall】 !

'...How is this possible!'

Cheng Tinggui was dumbfounded. Even when he occasionally discovered a flaw, Ancestor Tingyou merely glanced at him and easily patched it up!

'How can we fight this!?'

At this moment, a sword cry sounded:

It was Ye Tao making a move. He looked solemnly at Ancestor Tingyou, "I didn't expect you, this remnant, to still be alive. This time, you must not be spared!"

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Tingyou raised an eyebrow, "...Still dare to call me a remnant?"

In the next second, Ancestor Tingyou's figure disappeared from the original spot. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Ye Tao, a large hand grabbing fiercely!

"Slash!"

Seeing this, Ye Tao immediately activated his sword pill to strike. However, to his shock, his sword pill was actually caught by Ancestor Tingyou!

Infinite sword light burst forth, yet it couldn't tear apart Ancestor Tingyou's palm. Instead, it was entirely absorbed by him. The sword pill, which should have been capable of cutting through anything, now seemed like a harmless jade bead in his hand. With just two fingers, it suddenly emitted crackling explosive sounds!

"Demon, what kind of evil technique is this!?"

Ye Tao's eyes were bloodshot. This sword pill was tied to his cultivation and essence. If it were damaged, he himself would suffer significant harm!

"Wait... something's not right!"

"I seem to have not used the sword technique just now? Nor any divine abilities?" Ye Tao's thoughts cleared, and he was terrified to realize the foolish act he had committed.

Ancestor Tingyou certainly couldn't crush the sword pill by hand.

In fact, it was he himself who handed the sword pill to him!

But why would this happen?

While Ye Tao was still in shock, Ancestor Tingyou sighed:

"Unfortunately, even within the 【Yama Hall】 , I can only perform simple imitations. I have yet to comprehend its mysteries. It truly is related to the Fruit Position?"

He was imitating the 【Knowledge Obstruction】 .

As a banner spirit of the Myriad Spirits Banner, he had witnessed everything Lü Yang experienced, naturally having ample time and opportunity to comprehend such a wondrous technique.

As a result, he did achieve some success!

After all, back then, the Witch Ghost Path was merely a small sect. Even the great divine ability used to break through Foundation Establishment was singular. What did Ancestor Tingyou rely on to duel with Foundation Establishment cultivators?

He relied on his comprehension!

Comprehending others' innate divine abilities and talent divine abilities, using spells to imitate and utilize them, turning decay into magic. This was a technique only Ancestor Tingyou possessed!

"Crack!"

In the next second, Ancestor Tingyou directly crushed Ye Tao's sword pill. This mid-Foundation Establishment sword cultivator immediately vomited blood, his aura suddenly weakening.

On the other side, Hui Ku and Cheng Tinggui were also struggling to fight back.

Even if it was merely using the 【Yama Hall】 to falsely hold the mid-Foundation Establishment position, still fighting three opponents alone, Ancestor Tingyou managed to firmly hold the upper hand!

Such combat power was only slightly inferior to Lü Yang.

If Lü Yang possessed such combat power due to the 【Tribulation Wave】 , second-grade true skills, and numerous components stacking up massive stats.

Then Ancestor Tingyou was much simpler.

His magical duels relied entirely on talent!

However, at this moment.

"Amitabha!"

Suddenly, a thunderous Buddhist chant resounded from outside the 【Yama Hall】 . Then, from within the clouds, a giant hand descended out of thin air.

"Boom!"

With just this strike, the 【Yama Hall】 , which could trap three mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators, was directly torn apart. Upon seeing this, Ancestor Tingyou immediately narrowed his eyes:

"Great True Person"

The first to lose patience, in the end, was still the Pure Land!

## **- Chapter 279 : How Could It End Like This!**

[ 1,440 words ]

## Chapter 279: How Could It End Like This!

Just as Lü Yang had anticipated before entering meditation, the Grand True Persons from the major forces—Pure Land, Dao Court, and Sword Pavilion—who were observing the battle, now truly regretted their decisions.

"If we had known earlier, we shouldn't have allowed him to slaughter so recklessly!"

"This demon from Jiangbei, with that soul-harvesting, puppet-refining spiritual treasure, and Ting You... they're too troublesome. It would have been better to let Suo Huan handle it!"

"What should we do now?"

"If we intervene, we'll break the rules. Although the Demon Sect won't pursue the matter, since we've gained the advantage, Suo Huan's side will demand concessions."

"Vimalakirti has already made a move. What else can we do? He had already lost his golden body in the Kingdom of Qing. If not for attaining the Three Virtues of the Pure Land and the protection of a Bodhisattva, how could he have returned? This forced intervention is clearly under the Bodhisattva's directive. We can only watch."

Within the Foundation Establishment Realm, several divine senses interacted.

In the present world, a white lotus platform hovered in the sky, upon which sat a Dharma body with coiled hair, holding a Dharma implement, exhibiting thirty-two perfect marks.

"Audacious fiend! How dare you act so recklessly?"

Vimalakirti Venerable shouted in a deep voice, unleashing unparalleled Buddhist light. As he spoke, both hands moved simultaneously—one palm struck towards Lü Yang, the other towards Ancestor Ting You.

Boom!

In a flash, Ancestor Ting You, without hesitation, directly suspended the 【Yama Hall】 above Lü Yang's head, shielding him from the massive Buddhist palm.

With just this one palm, the already damaged 【Yama Hall】 shattered completely. Ancestor Ting You's aura plummeted, and the many banner spirits forming the 【Yama Hall】 also broke apart, transforming into white light that flew back to the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, rendering them unsummonable for a while.

"Stubborn and unrepentant."

Vimalakirti Venerable's face was compassionate, but his eyes were filled with cold killing intent. He raised his palm again, this time enveloping both Ancestor Ting You and Lü Yang.

Seeing this, Ancestor Ting You could only sigh helplessly, "Alas, it's a pity I've exhausted my strength."

In his current state, barely maintaining mid-Foundation Establishment was his limit. The position of a late-Foundation Establishment Grand True Person was beyond his capacity.

If not for this, how could he be defeated by a mere Pure Land Venerable?

In the next moment, Ancestor Ting You was crushed by the Buddhist palm. His true spirit turned into white light and fell into the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, severely injured like the other banner spirits.

However, at the same time, Vimalakirti Venerable's expression changed drastically!

"...Where is he!?"

Lifting his Buddhist palm, he found that Lü Yang, who was previously under the 【Yama Hall】 , had vanished. What he had just struck was merely a shell.

An Immortal Embryo Clone!

This was Ancestor Ting You's final act—using a technique to mimic Lü Yang's 【Determine Closeness and Distance】 , sending Lü Yang's true body to another location.

Then, he used the Immortal Embryo Clone to conceal it.

Lü Yang and his clone shared one heart and similar auras. Coupled with Ancestor Ting You's influence, Vimalakirti Venerable was momentarily deceived.

Of course, imitation is still imitation. Moreover, Lü Yang was refining the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend on the Magnetic Divine Mountain. Ancestor Ting You couldn't send him too far.

In the next moment, Vimalakirti Venerable's divine sense swept across and quickly found Lü Yang's figure in the mountain's belly. He immediately raised his palm to strike again.

However—he was too late!

"Clang!"

Suddenly, a magnificent sword light rose from the mountain's belly, like the rising sun in the east, directly slashing at the descending Buddhist palm!

In an instant, Vimalakirti Venerable's expression changed slightly.

This Buddhist palm, though seemingly ordinary, was actually a superior Dharma body technique, containing the subtlety of Sumeru transforming into mustard seed. It was not something ordinary True Persons could withstand.

Yet now, he felt as if his palm had encountered an indestructible stone. Although he could still grasp the opponent steadily, he couldn't crush it. If he exerted more force, sharp pain would emanate from his palm, and even the Buddhist light dimmed significantly.

'How is this possible?'

Before Vimalakirti Venerable could react, the sword light in his palm suddenly expanded, like a violent wind, forcibly dispersing his five fingers!

The Buddhist palm disintegrated, revealing the scene within.

In the forest, Lü Yang, who was previously meditating, had already opened his eyes and stood up, one hand resting on the sword hilt.

In an instant, the Foundation Establishment Realm was in chaos!

Not only the Grand True Persons from various sides, but even the high and mighty True Lords cast their gazes down, looking at Lü Yang with slight surprise.

"Has he broken through?"

"Impossible. Refining the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend can't be that fast. Unless his cultivation is profound and he has already comprehended the mysteries of the Earth Fiend [Yin Wood]."

"Even so, it's still too fast!"

To the voices of doubt, Lü Yang seemed oblivious. He merely sighed, holding the 【Tribulation Wave】 in his hand, which emitted a joyful sword hum.

His rapid refinement of the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend was naturally due to the 【Tribulation Wave】's 【Holding Method】's marvel. This marvel allowed him to grasp the innate divine ability 【Magnetic Disjunction】 early, enabling him to proceed without detours or bottlenecks, making the process smooth and unimpeded.

"Boom!"

In the next moment, divine light of various abilities emanated from Lü Yang's body. Besides his innate divine ability, two other lights swirled around him.

【Embrace the Mountain】 !

【Magnetic Disjunction】 !

But this wasn't the end. As the 【Tribulation Wave】 in his hand operated, after a brief pause, a third divine light appeared on the sword!

A pseudo-Grand True Person's position, a third innate divine ability!

Its name: 【Kill the Authority】 !

Seeing this, even Vimalakirti Venerable fell silent. Indeed, Lü Yang had just broken through and was still no match for him in a real fight.

But in terms of survival, he was more than capable.

At this moment, unless a Grand True Person at the peak of Foundation Establishment made a move, or several late-Foundation Establishment Grand True Persons joined forces, no one could kill Lü Yang!

Almost simultaneously, a mournful dragon roar came from the distant sea.

All the Grand True Persons turned to look.

"Tian Qiu has been defeated!"

"The latest novel is first released at Six Nine Book Bar!"

"Suo Huan is indeed reliable. He actually defeated Tian Qiu, severed his physical body, leaving only his soul to escape. He's probably heading to the underworld for reincarnation."

"The Dao enemy is dead. Suo Huan seeks gold now!"

Immediately, all the Grand True Persons looked at Lü Yang, who stood with his sword. Even Vimalakirti Venerable couldn't help but sigh and then withdrew his hand and retreated.

"There's nothing more to be done. He actually managed to survive."

Meanwhile, inside the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

Lü Yang suddenly felt something and looked to his side, where a refined young man quietly appeared. Though half of his body was stained with blood, his energy was at its peak.

"Congratulations, fellow Daoist."

Upon appearing, Suo Huan cupped his hands to Lü Yang and smiled, "One sword to cut the sea, a Dharma body to capture a dragon, and that Ting You, truly lives up to the name."

Lü Yang returned the salute and said solemnly, "Fellow Daoist is about to break through?"

Suo Huan nodded, "Given the situation, I should risk everything. Once I, like you, carve out a path of survival, we shall drink together!"

"Before that... are you leaving?"

At this point, Suo Huan smiled slightly, "This place is about to become my gold-seeking ground. With all the True Lords watching, it's dangerous for you to stay."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang's gaze fluctuated slightly. Then he suddenly reached out and summoned the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner into his hand. This supreme treasure now dimmed, all banner spirits in a dormant state. Among them, Ancestor Ting You was the most severely injured, his true spirit on the verge of collapse.

Seeing this, Lü Yang pressed his lips together, then shook his head, "...No need!"

Suo Huan was taken aback, "You're not leaving?"

Lü Yang put away the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, his expression cold, "If they want to kill me, let them come. If not, they should leave. Having injured my banner spirits, how can this matter end here?"

As he spoke, Lü Yang looked towards Vimalakirti Venerable.

This Pure Land Venerable was in the worst condition. The injuries he suffered in the Kingdom of Qing at the hands of Hong Ju hadn't healed. He was actually on par with Lü Yang.

At this point, Lü Yang had nothing to fear.

Just the right person to make an example of!

"They initiated the killing. When it ends is up to me! Fellow Daoist, don't worry about me. Let me kill a Grand True Person first, then it'll be time to leave!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 280 : Suo Huan Seeks Gold, Lü Yang Battles the Venerable

[ 1,475 words ]

Chapter 280: Suo Huan Seeks Gold, Lü Yang Battles the Venerable

Lü Yang's words fell, and the chilling killing intent in his tone was startling; even Suo Huan gave him a deep glance, revealing a hint of surprise.

However, soon, a look of understanding appeared in his eyes.

"Fellow Daoist is well-intentioned, but I have no way to help you."

Suo Huan shook his head; while Lü Yang dared to offend the Pure Land, he lacked such confidence and could only sigh.

Seeing this, Lü Yang showed a contemplative expression.

After pondering for a moment, he still spoke: "Fellow Daoist, forgive my bluntness, but your current pursuit of gold..."

Before Lü Yang could finish, Suo Huan directly interrupted him, calmly saying: "I have survived overseas for six hundred years, and I've thought through everything."

"This time, it's merely a desperate gamble."

At this point, a trace of nostalgia appeared in Suo Huan's eyes: "I understand your meaning, that all parties assisting me in seeking gold have their own interests."

"Perhaps none of them have good intentions."

"But this is already the best method I can think of; otherwise, if all parties intend to obstruct me, I truly have no chance at all."

"Back then, I escaped from the 【Huanxu Realm】 , received the favor of the Heavenly Dao, and before its collapse, it transformed into the 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 , even deducing a book called 『The Dao Sutra of All Spirits Returning to the Void』 for me, as

my method to seek gold. As long as I use this secret method to devour a fruit position, I can revive the 【Huanxu Realm】 ."

This was Suo Huan's obsession, and also his helplessness.

"I am different from you, without a Dao foundation, and it's impossible for me to reincarnate and cultivate again. Although a lifetime's lifespan is long, it's only this one true self."

"Your methods of seeking gold are useless to me."

"Only this 『The Dao Sutra of All Spirits Returning to the Void』 is my path upward, not to mention it can also restore my homeland. So this path, I must walk!"

Having said this much, Lü Yang could only clasp his hands: "Then I wish Fellow Daoist success."

Suo Huan silently nodded, then waved his hand.

In the next second, Lü Yang felt the world spinning, and he had already been sent out of the Magnetic Divine Mountain. Upon turning his eyes, he found himself in the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Looking around, he suddenly saw a mass of Buddhist light.

Seeing this, Lü Yang's eyebrows slightly raised, revealing a smile. Although Suo Huan said he couldn't help, he actually gave him a hand in private.

He had sent him to the front of Vimalakirti Venerable!

Immediately after, in the present world, from the direction of the Magnetic Divine Mountain, a brilliant light pierced the sky, directly entering the Foundation Establishment Realm, then rising even higher.

"Suo Huan has begun to seek gold!"

"An outer-world cultivator... he's the first!"

For a time, all the great True Persons stationed in the Foundation Establishment Realm turned to look; every gold-seeker's experience was worth their attention.

Meanwhile, inside the Magnetic Divine Mountain, Suo Huan stood with his hands behind his back.

Above his head, an official position formed by interwoven talismanic script appeared, named **【Duke of Coastal Defense and National Protection】** , surprisingly a first-rank position of the Dao Court!

It was precisely with the blessing of this official position that he could display the combat power of a perfected Foundation Establishment, and then, relying on formations and methods, he slew the Great Crown Prince of the Dragon Palace, Tian Qiu's physical body. It was also because of this official position that he could stand at the threshold of seeking gold, thereby taking the most critical step:

Condensing golden nature!

In the next second, a golden pattern appeared between Suo Huan's eyebrows, shaped like a crescent moon, with an obvious illusory quality compared to the past Chong Guang.

This was also normal.

After all, he condensed it through external forces, while Chong Guang obtained it through self-cultivation; the foundations of the two were vastly different. One could say that being able to condense it was already a stroke of luck.

"Fortunately, I have other means to compensate."

Suo Huan took a deep breath, looked up at the sky above, as if he saw several colossal Dharma bodies quietly overlooking him.

He had no confusion.

The **【Calming Sea Pearl】** at his waist was taken down, and Suo Huan communicated with it using his divine sense. In the next second, a brilliant star lit up for him in the sky above.

**【Long Flowing Water】** !

Seeing this, Suo Huan immediately took out a jade bottle, and upon uncorking it, a strong water-element aura instantly spread from the bottle.

**【Heavenly Virtue Beneficent Divine Water】** !

Almost simultaneously, Suo Huan clearly felt that the many gazes falling on him suddenly became sharp, vaguely revealing a hint of killing intent.

" **【Ang Xiao】** , you really made a move!"

"Can't trace the cause and effect; when did it reach Suo Huan's hands?"

"No matter, we had anticipated this. After all, someone wants to prove 【Long Flowing Water】 ; he can't just sit idly by. Let's see what other means he has."

In the infinitely high distance, several vast divine senses intertwined.

Suo Huan knew nothing of this, nor did he care. He merely drank the 【Heavenly Virtue Beneficent Divine Water】 in one gulp, then activated his mana to refine it.

The 【Heavenly Virtue Beneficent Divine Water】 was a treasure of the fruit position of 【Long Flowing Water】 , possessing the virtues of clarity and nourishment, benefiting the world with its beneficence. Consuming it could bring life from death, prosperity, and development, benefiting others. Its imagery perfectly matched his current situation, instantly causing the heavenly light of 【Long Flowing Water】 to shine brightly!

"Rise!"

In the next second, Suo Huan exerted all his mana, and the 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 behind him manifested, reflecting the Buddhist light, then soared into the sky, flying towards the fruit position!

Meanwhile, below in the Foundation Establishment Realm.

"What do you think, how much chance does Suo Huan have?"

Vimalakirti Venerable shook his head, sneering: "The Lords are watching from the heavens; how could they truly watch an outer-world cultivator seek gold?"

"You can't say that. Since this time is to prove 【Long Flowing Water】 , shaking the foundation of that one in the Underworld, the Lords may not care about some outer-world cultivator. At worst, kill him afterward, let him take the golden nature to reincarnate, and in the future, he can be a useful pawn again."

"Still, it's your Holy Sect."

During the conversation, Vimalakirti Venerable's expression turned unsightly. After all, for the Pure Land, the biggest goal of this trip was actually to have Lü Yang convert to the Pure Land.

In the end, it was still a failure.

Even his personal intervention yielded no results, which would undoubtedly greatly affect his status in the Bodhisattva's heart, also making him involuntarily harbor other thoughts.

'Besides me, the Dao Court and Sword Pavilion are also eyeing that Lü Yang.'

'While Suo Huan seeks gold, and the True Lords are watching to guard against that one in the Underworld, if I invite them to act together, perhaps we can besiege and kill that Yuan Tu?'

Thinking of this, Vimalakirti Venerable's thoughts became active.

"Lords..."

He had just opened his mouth, but before his words could spread, he suddenly felt an indescribable suction force fall upon him, and his expression changed drastically.

Vimalakirti Venerable's reaction was not slow; almost at the moment of sensing danger, he activated a protective spiritual treasure, surprisingly his lotus platform. At this moment, a Buddhist light blossomed from the lotus platform, firmly protecting him in the center, and then exploded into a burst of shattered firelight.

"Who is it!"

Vimalakirti Venerable's gaze turned rapidly, only to find that the attacking objects were not just one, but dozens or hundreds, and at a glance, they were sword lights as swift as thunder!

'Sword Pavilion... no, it's that junior!?'

Vimalakirti Venerable suddenly realized, also revealing a trace of disbelief. He never expected Lü Yang to dare to come to him proactively!

Does he really think he can kill him?

In an instant, Vimalakirti Venerable was both angry and amused. He immediately exerted all his mana, the Buddha's palm reappeared, directly sweeping away the countless sword lights, revealing the scene behind.

Then he saw a towering light and shadow.

**【Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 !**

The Dharma body sat in the Foundation Establishment Realm, with three heads and six arms, a blue face with fangs, soaring in mysterious fire. A giant hand covering the sky was fiercely grabbing towards him!

"....."

Almost simultaneously, the other great True Persons who had just been conversing with Vimalakirti Venerable had disappeared, leaving only Vimalakirti Venerable alone.

Boom!

A loud noise erupted in the Foundation Establishment Realm. The giant hand covering the sky was blocked by Vimalakirti Venerable, and the rolling mysterious fire parted, revealing the young Daoist behind the Dharma body.

Seeing this, Vimalakirti Venerable gritted his Buddha teeth: "Junior..."

But Lü Yang didn't bother to respond, holding his sword and forming a seal, immediately transforming into a yellow light, like pushing mountains and overturning peaks, crashing down towards him!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 281 : The Manifestation of the Dharma Body, Seven Kills in Power

[ 1,370 words ]

Chapter 281: The Manifestation of the Dharma Body, Seven Kills in Power

“【Decree of Moving Mountains and Shifting Peaks】!”

Lü Yang struck with full force, wielding the 【Tribulation Wave】 , performing hand seals, chanting incantations, and pointing to the profound—all in one seamless motion under the mystical augmentation.

This move had been long planned by Lü Yang.

He deliberately used the myriad sword lights and his Dharma Body to obscure Vimalakirti Venerable's vision. When the latter finally broke through the layers of obstructions and saw Lü Yang, he also witnessed Lü Yang's hand seal, heard his incantation, and was inevitably struck by the final pointing gesture.

“Splash, splash!”

In the next moment, Vimalakirti Venerable was hit by Lü Yang's fully charged 【Decree of Moving Mountains and Shifting Peaks】 , causing endless mud to gush from his seven orifices.

“Amitabha!”

Vimalakirti Venerable suffered a significant loss right at the start, immediately halting his upward movement, chanting the Buddha's name, and then spitting out a bright Buddhist flame.

The flames engulfed his entire body, attempting to dissolve the mud.

However, how could Lü Yang give him this chance? Almost simultaneously as Vimalakirti Venerable tried to dispel the spell, Lü Yang's figure vanished from his original spot.

Seeing this, Vimalakirti Venerable quickly slapped his forehead.

In the next second, Buddhist light flashed, and a Zen staff appeared out of thin air, blocking in front of him, just in time to intercept the blade of the 【Tribulation Wave】 .

“Clang, clang—!”

Instantly, sparks flew, the sound of metal clashing resonated through the clouds, and even though the sharp sword energy was blocked, it still caused Vimalakirti Venerable's entire body to ache.

In an instant, Vimalakirti Venerable was furious:

“Demon! How dare you be so arrogant?”

With this shout, Vimalakirti Venerable's figure suddenly expanded, layers of Buddhist light emerged behind him, and numerous Zen forests stood tall, revealing a vast pure land.

Immediately after, countless golden lights flew out from the pure land, falling onto Vimalakirti Venerable like golden lacquer, dyeing his figure as if cast in gold, and his body expanded rapidly, transforming into a majestic golden body towering between heaven and earth.

【Golden Chestnut Tathagata Dharma Body】 !

As soon as Vimalakirti Venerable revealed this technique, Lü Yang squinted his eyes, sensing a very similar aura from this towering golden body.

‘Just like me... drawing Qi from the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 ?’

Lü Yang suddenly remembered that the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 was not only the territory of the Holy Sect; as Real Person Miao Yin had once said, the Pure Land also had involvement there.

With thoughts racing, Lü Yang did not back down in the slightest.

He was confident in his extraordinary gains in the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 . Even a Great Real Person might not surpass him. If it came down to a contest of Dharma Bodies, the outcome was still uncertain!

“Boom!”

In the next second, the two Dharma Bodies collided like a mountain collapsing and a tsunami, with mysterious fire falling on one side and golden light dispersing on the other, triggering a sky-shattering sound.

Such a scene made Vimalakirti Venerable's expression serious. Clearly, he did not expect Lü Yang's Dharma Body to be so fierce. However, as a Venerable of the Pure Land and a Great Real Person, how could he consider himself inferior to a junior? He immediately stood his ground and clashed head-on.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Each collision was like hundreds of thunderbolts exploding. Lü Yang fused with his Dharma Body, his innate divine abilities combined with the mystical power of the Dharma Body, and he suddenly shouted:

“Break! Shatter! Crack! Destroy! Die!”

With each shout, Lü Yang would drive his Dharma Body to deliver a powerful punch, each time accompanied by a brilliant divine light enhancing him.

【Kill in Power】 !

Seven Kills in Power, disaster without control. This innate divine ability had a simple effect: causing all who harbored hostility towards Lü Yang to suffer 【calamities】 .

These 【calamities】 could be minor mistakes during combat or deviations leading to inner demons. The greater the disparity in cultivation between the parties, the more potent the 【calamities】 . Strictly speaking, this was a simplified version of the world's killing intent, capable of killing invisibly!

In the next second, Vimalakirti Venerable's figure suddenly froze.

If only 【Discern Right and Wrong】 and 【Heavenly Firmament】 couldn't shake his golden body, then 【Kill in Power】 was the final straw.

In an instant, he felt his Qi become unbalanced.

The previously smooth operation of his Dharma Body suddenly showed some shackles, as if hidden flaws that had never been noticed before suddenly erupted.

Including the hidden injuries from being killed by Hong Ju earlier, even after reconstructing his Dharma Body, they hadn't fully healed and now erupted, forming a severe chain reaction. For a moment, his previously manageable state became precarious. Before he could adjust, Lü Yang had already launched a full-force attack!

“Boom!”

With the final loud noise, the golden Buddhist light was smashed to pieces in one go, suddenly dispersing into a sky full of golden rain, unclear whether it was golden light or blood.

【Golden Chestnut Tathagata Dharma Body】 was broken!

‘The timing is perfect!’

Lü Yang took a step back, blood spilling from the corner of his mouth. The cost to himself was not small, and his manifested Dharma Body also showed fine cracks.

However, this injury was just right for him now!

With the mystical augmentation of the 【Dharma Body】 , the heavier the injury, the stronger his divine abilities and magic power became. At this moment, they surged more powerfully than at the beginning!

“Hu—” Lü Yang took a deep breath.

Almost simultaneously, the 【Heavenly Firmament All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 behind him also inhaled, and the invisible suction force once again fell upon Vimalakirti Venerable.

【All-Encompassing】 !

This Dharma Body's mystical power specifically countered Buddhist cultivators. Vimalakirti Venerable, having been killed once before, had an unstable soul, and now felt the world spinning.

‘Not good!’

Only at this moment did a chill arise in Vimalakirti Venerable's heart.

Because he realized that despite the intense battle between him and Lü Yang, the Dao Court and Sword Pavilion remained unresponsive, with no one coming to his aid.

'This junior had planned this all along! He came prepared!'

As Vimalakirti Venerable suspected, Lü Yang's confrontation with him was not a spur-of-the-moment decision but a calculated move after weighing the pros and cons.

After all, having successfully broken through, his position as a pseudo-Great Real Person had already shown enough "value" to regain the attention of the Holy Sect's True Lords.

Moreover, even among those whose paths were cut off, there was a significant difference between an ordinary Real Person and a Great Real Person. Even in the eyes of the True Lords, Great Real Persons were notable figures. As for the path being cut off? For a Great Real Person, this might even be a bonus, making it easier to gain the favor of the True Lords.

With the Holy Sect's backing, many things became easier.

Having previously suffered attacks from various parties, Lü Yang had now turned the tables. Since both sides didn't want to tear each other apart, a tacit compensation was naturally needed.

Then Lü Yang proposed his compensation through action.

He wanted to kill Vimalakirti!

In this situation, even the Pure Land wouldn't try to stop Lü Yang, because in most people's eyes, this was just Lü Yang's little whim.

You want to kill Vimalakirti? Can you really do it?

What a joke. How could a Great Real Person be so easily killed? Not to mention a Great Real Person of the Pure Land. At worst, he could just rebuild his Dharma Body again.

In the eyes of the True Lords above, and even other Great Real Persons, Lü Yang couldn't possibly kill Vimalakirti, so there was no intention to stop him. This "compensation" was just a way to appease Lü Yang and save some effort. As for Vimalakirti? He would just have to endure the hardship.

After all, Buddhist cultivators were tough.

Could he really be beaten to death?

At this moment, only Vimalakirti Venerable, facing Lü Yang directly, could truly feel the pressure this junior brought him.

'He wants to kill me... Can he kill me?'

Vimalakirti Venerable didn't know the details, but his intuition as a Great Real Person constantly warned him that Lü Yang still had powerful techniques yet to be used.

'That spiritual sword!'

Previously, when Lü Yang slashed the sea with one sword, splitting the sea and sky, the scene flashed through his mind. At that time, that sword was insignificant to him, but now, it might not be!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 282 : Even if it means eternal damnation, I shall proceed!**

[ 1,551 words ]

Chapter 282: Even if it means eternal damnation, I shall proceed!

'We can't continue fighting like this!'

Vimalakirti Venerable was horrified in his heart.

His shattered golden body was now oozing blood, and the scorching mysterious fire, like slithering serpents, continued to crawl over him.

These fire serpents, originating from Lü Yang's Dharma Body, were utterly pervasive, infiltrating through the cracks left by his broken golden body, directly entering his internal organs and beginning to burn them fiercely.

Moreover, the strange force that absorbed souls was still relentlessly pulling at his soul.

No matter how one looked at it, he was now completely at a disadvantage.

Vimalakirti Venerable stood mid-air, hands clasped together, his face contorted in pain, seemingly powerless to resist, yet his mind was exceptionally clear.

'Should I use that spiritual sword?'

He was waiting.

Waiting for Lü Yang to strike first, to unleash that sea-cleaving sword light.

However, he waited for a long time, and Lü Yang did not draw his sword, instead continuing to stalemate with him.

“Eh!”

Finally, Vimalakirti Venerable let out a long sigh.

Not only did his face show no joy, but instead revealed regret: “I truly underestimated you.”

As soon as he finished speaking, this Pure Land Venerable shook his body.

As if merely taking off a piece of clothing, he actually peeled off a layer of skin, shedding it along with the many injuries inflicted by Lü Yang, the mysterious fire serpents, and other divine phenomena.

This was a meticulously hidden technique of his.

If Lü Yang had truly used the 【Tribulation Wave】 to strike, he could have used this wondrous method to shed his flesh and skin to endure a calamity, thereby neutralizing Lü Yang's deadly trump card.

However, Lü Yang remained inactive.

Under such circumstances, enduring Lü Yang's attack became akin to boiling a frog in warm water, a loss outweighing the gain, so he had no choice but to prematurely employ this technique.

Yet, he was still puzzled.

‘How was it exposed?’

Among the many Pure Land mystical methods, this 【Burning Body Offering to Buddha】 technique had almost never been shown to others.

Logically, Lü Yang shouldn't have been prepared for it.

‘Could it have been calculated?’

‘But he merely holds the position of a pseudo-True Person; how could he calculate me? Unless he possesses a treasure that reveals heavenly secrets, in which case my chances of victory are even lower.’

Vimalakirti Venerable's heart grew heavy.

Indeed, as he had surmised, Lü Yang was able to see through his preparations precisely by relying on the 【Tribulation Wave】's 【Clairvoyance】 , deducing cause and effect.

The next moment, Vimalakirti Venerable sighed deeply, clasped his hands together, and behind him appeared infinite light and shadows.

Suddenly, numerous Buddhist cultivators were seen sitting solemnly in temples, gathering in a Zen forest, chanting scriptures in unison, transforming into rolling thunderous sounds, each word a gem, blessing Vimalakirti Venerable.

“Amitabha!”

The solemn Buddhist chant resounded, instantly dispelling Lü Yang's soul-capturing divine power.

Vimalakirti Venerable's figure disappeared, replaced by an ancient temple.

【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 !

Upon seeing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes, pondering: ‘He even brought out the temple foundation of the Pure Land; he's ready to fight me to the death!’

Vimalakirti Venerable was indeed left with no choice.

At this moment, in addition to the 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 , he also brought out his life's savings.

Within the Buddhist light, dozens of exquisite spiritual treasures appeared.

Prayer wheels, wooden fish, flying knives, command flags, golden alms bowls, precious canopies, jade bottles—although most were lower and middle-grade magical treasures, they now converged into a mass.

The light of the spiritual treasures flowed like a river, combined with several superior-grade spiritual treasures, surrounding the temple and firmly protecting him.

【River of Myriad Treasures】 !

In the past, Duo Bao Tongzi was the first to join the Pure Land and naturally offered this technique, which Vimalakirti Venerable now employed.

However, Lü Yang remained indifferent upon seeing this.

With a single thought, he rubbed his fingertips together, producing a divine brilliance imbued with a strange magnetic force, breaking through the five elements, and slammed it into the River of Myriad Treasures.

【Disjointed Magnetism】 !

This innate divine power countered the five elements.

No matter what magical treasure, once touched by the magnetic light transformed from it, would immediately lose its mystical properties.

Under the illumination of this divine light, the River of Myriad Treasures instantly melted like ice and snow, its spiritual light dissipating, unable to maintain its form.

Seeing this, Vimalakirti Venerable couldn't help but show helplessness on his face.

He clearly hadn't expected that, as a True Person, he would be forced to such a state by Lü Yang, unable even to maintain his defense!

'Perhaps... I should retreat for now?'

Pure Land Buddhist cultivators were always flexible.

At this moment, Vimalakirti Venerable felt a sense of fear, thinking that fighting Lü Yang to the death here was simply not worth it.

'I'm not at my peak state right now!'

'If it weren't for Hong Ju killing me once, causing hidden injuries, and then being affected by this junior's divine power, leading to an outbreak, I would never have fallen into such a predicament.'

'Once I recover from my injuries, it's not too late to fight him again.'

As his thoughts raced, Vimalakirti Venerable had already made up his mind.

He immediately took a deep breath and suddenly expanded the 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 behind him!

In an instant, the grand temple opened and closed like a blood-red mouth, swallowing Lü Yang whole to trap him.

Vimalakirti Venerable himself then rode a beam of escape light, intending to flee directly from the Foundation Establishment Realm to the present world, not giving Lü Yang a chance to kill him.

The temple was solemn and difficult to escape from.

Even Lü Yang's 【Determining Intimacy and Distance】 was considered by Vimalakirti Venerable, who found a way to seal it.

“Hmph, trying to escape?”

Upon seeing this, Lü Yang's eyes flashed.

Then, with a shake of his body, mysterious fire surged, and he once again unleashed the 【Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 !

In the center of the Buddhist temple, atop the treasure hall, a towering evil god stood.

With three heads and six arms, a blue face and fangs, its actions included kicking Buddhas and cursing ancestors, toppling Zen forests.

Its six arms exerted full strength, delivering a powerful punch to the temple.

“Boom!”

After a loud explosion, there was a silent stillness between heaven and earth.

At this moment, the entire 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 was forcibly dented in the center.

Inside the temple, countless light and shadow images of Buddhist monks chanted scriptures in unison, invoking karmic fire to fall upon the Dharma Body.

However, it did not hinder its actions in the slightest; instead, it seemed to enhance its power.

The six arms continuously punched, each strike heavily hitting various parts of the temple.

“Pfft——!”

Vimalakirti Venerable immediately spat out a mouthful of blood.

‘What a demon!’

The 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 was the manifestation of Vimalakirti Venerable's Dao foundation.

He originally planned to use it temporarily to trap Lü Yang and then retrieve it from a distance after escaping.

At most, it would only delay some time, and minor damage would be insignificant.

But now, Lü Yang, disregarding his injuries, forcibly drove the Dharma Body to launch a strong attack, leaving him in a dilemma.

He couldn't possibly watch Lü Yang destroy his Dao foundation, could he?

Vimalakirti Venerable was not an indecisive person.

In a flash, he had already made a decision: '...Forget it! Escaping is the priority! Entering the present world only takes a moment; he absolutely cannot break my Dao foundation!'

The next second, he rode the escape light and leaped out of the Foundation Establishment Realm.

However, in the next second, Vimalakirti Venerable felt as if he had fallen into an ice cave.

Because in the present world, right in front of him, a young Daoist who looked identical to Lü Yang was holding the 【Tribulation Wave】 , calmly watching him!

But Lü Yang was clearly still inside the 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 !

'That clone!?'

In an instant, Vimalakirti Venerable recalled the immortal embryo clone he had previously smashed to pulp.

How could it have reassembled?

'This is bad...'

If he hadn't focused solely on escaping and had chosen to fight Lü Yang to the death, perhaps the outcome would still be uncertain.

But his fear had instead driven him into a dead end!

However, he had no time to think further.

Because at this moment, Lü Yang's main body inside the 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 had already ceased his actions, focusing all his attention on the immortal embryo clone holding the Dharma sword.

As he stopped, he even released the protective treasure light, allowing the 【Immaculate Pure Land Temple】 to suppress him mercilessly.

His already severe injuries suddenly worsened.

However, correspondingly, the more severe his injuries, the stronger the 【Dharma Body】's enhancement of his divine powers and magical abilities, almost instantly reaching the peak!

Clang clang——!

In the clone's hand, the 【Tribulation Wave】 emitted a high-pitched sword cry.

The 【Proclaiming Might】 divine power, which had previously entered cooldown after cleaving the sea, had now fully recovered.

At this moment, Vimalakirti Venerable instead calmed down:

“If you kill me, benefactor, you will have no way back to the Pure Land.

From then on, all Bodhisattvas will no longer show mercy but will truly seek your life.”

“Do you really want eternal damnation?”

He didn't expect Lü Yang to truly give up on killing him.

As long as Lü Yang hesitated for a moment, he could use a wondrous method to avoid this deadly situation.

However, the response he received was a sword light that advanced with unstoppable momentum.

【Proclaiming Might】 !

The sea-cleaving sword reappeared.

Vimalakirti Venerable's figure was instantly engulfed by the sword light, shattered inch by inch, and finally turned into countless ashes.

Eternal damnation?

I shall proceed!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,325 words ]

## Chapter 283: Fall of the Fruit Position!

At this moment, within the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Not far from the battlefield between Lü Yang and Vimalakirti Venerable, the Grand Real Persons from the Dao Court, Sword Pavilion, and the Holy Sect were confronting each other.

To be precise, it was the Grand Real Person from the Holy Sect facing off against those from the Sword Pavilion and Dao Court.

However, despite this, the atmosphere among the three parties was not particularly tense; none had the intention to fight to the death for others.

There was even a hint of watching a show.

“Fellow Daoist Ye, who do you think will win between Yuan Tu and Vimalakirti? The commotion is quite intense; I reckon at least one will die.”

The Grand Real Person from the Dao Court was a second-rank official named Chen Ruzhen, who had previously represented the Dao Court in meeting Suo Huan as the [Dutian Minister of Military Affairs].

The Grand Real Person from the Sword Pavilion was Ye Shaoying, the current head of the Ye family.

Ye Guyue was his daughter.

Therefore, to be fair, he was the one who most wanted to kill Lü Yang at this moment, but unfortunately, the Grand Real Person from the Holy Sect blocked his way.

“.Hmph!”

After pondering for a moment, Ye Shaoying sneered, “Fellow Daoist Vimalakirti has attained the Dao for many years; even if injured, that demon has just broken through—how could he be a match?”

This was not mere bravado but a considered conclusion. A false Grand Real Person, after all, was still lacking; even with the realm of a Grand Real Person, he was ultimately inferior. In a real fight, he would surely die. Even if Vimalakirti Venerable was in poor condition, there was no reason for him to be slain by a junior.

“Fellow Daoist, you are mistaken.”

Before Ye Shaoying finished speaking, the Grand Real Person from the Holy Sect laughed aloud, “You should know, similar events have occurred before!”

“Nonsense!”

Ye Shaoying naturally understood what the other meant—nothing more than the time when Chong Guang, at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, also falsely held the position of Grand Real Person and killed enemies on the battlefield.

But who was Chong Guang?

Born with innate spiritual essence, backed by a True Lord; such a background would make him a key disciple in the Sword Pavilion. What right did Lü Yang have to compare?

However, at this moment.

“Boom!”

A loud explosion resounded from the distant battlefield, spiritual tides surged, simultaneously affecting both the Foundation Establishment Realm and the present world. The previously chaotic heavenly secrets gradually became clear.

The three Grand Real Persons immediately looked over.

The first thing they saw was Lü Yang, trapped by the [Immaculate Pure Land Temple], covered in blood, barely breathing, on the verge of death.

Ye Shaoying's face immediately showed joy: “As expected, Fellow Daoist Vimalakirti has won!”

On the other side, Chen Ruzhen from the Dao Court also looked pleased. If Lü Yang was truly defeated, could the Dao Court's goal this time be within reach?

Meanwhile, the Grand Real Person from the Holy Sect's expression darkened.

His name was [Jun Tong], a Grand Real Person under the [Zengcai Qiluo True Lord], who was also on good terms with the [Qingcheng Feixue True Lord], hence he quite appreciated Lü Yang. Otherwise, he wouldn't have taken the initiative to block the Sword Pavilion and Dao Court for him.

However, the current situation was clearly unfavorable.

‘After all, he's young; too arrogant after the breakthrough. Vimalakirti is still a Grand Real Person; escaping would be fortunate, let alone killing him?’

Thinking of this, Jun Tong couldn't help but sigh inwardly:

‘But... I can't let him enter the Pure Land!’

An ordinary Real Person and a Grand Real Person carried vastly different weight. Jun Tong had already decided to act at the critical moment to kill Lü Yang directly.

‘Thus, at least I can send his soul to reincarnation. His talent is so high; in our Holy Sect, only Chong Guang could compare in a thousand years. It’s only because his path was cut off that he ended up like this. If I let him reincarnate for five lifetimes and start anew, perhaps he could still be a useful talent.’

With this thought, Jun Tong was about to act.

However, the next second, he suddenly stopped, staring intently at the [Immaculate Pure Land Temple] enveloping Lü Yang, frowning:

‘Where is Vimalakirti?’

At the same time, Ye Shaoying and Chen Ruzhen also noticed something amiss, looking around, but found no trace of Vimalakirti in either the present world or the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Where had he died?

At this moment, Lü Yang’s body suddenly opened his eyes, then slowly stood up. As he moved, a shocking scene unfolded.

The [Immaculate Pure Land Temple] collapsed!

Endless Buddha light, monks and masters, at this moment, seemed like tofu being squeezed, unable to withstand Lü Yang’s aura, directly shattering inch by inch!

In an instant, Ye Shaoying’s face froze.

‘How is this possible!’

The [Immaculate Pure Land Temple] was Vimalakirti’s fundamental Dao base. Its collapse now meant he was already dead? Actually slain by Lü Yang?

On the other side, Chen Ruzhen from the Dao Court looked even more terrified, silently retreating behind Ye Shaoying. After all, it was well known that Dao Court cultivators had the weakest combat power. Since Lü Yang could kill Vimalakirti Venerable, he could likely kill him too. How could he not feel fear?

But soon, the two regained their composure.

Ye Shaoying even shook his head and said, “Fellow Daoist Vimalakirti was injured after all. Though defeated this time, once recovered, the outcome might not be the same.”

“Recover?”

At this moment, a clear laugh came, as Lü Yang opened his eyes, reached out, and the \[Tribulation Wave] flew over from the present world.

“It's best not to overthink.”

“From now on, Vimalakirti no longer exists!”

Lü Yang's voice echoed, and for a time, only his voice remained, while the others' expressions changed slightly, subconsciously calculating.

Soon, Ye Shaoying showed a shocked expression:

“No karma... How can there be no karma!?”

After death, Pure Land Venerables do not enter reincarnation but are drawn back to the Pure Land through karma, making them extremely hard to kill. But now, Vimalakirti's karma was extinguished!

\[Yuantu]!

The fifth mystery of the \[Tribulation Wave]; this sword severs karma when killing, making it impossible to calculate. Those killed by it inevitably become beings without cause or effect.

Even the Pure Land cannot receive them!

The only result is the soul's complete annihilation!

Such a battle result, even if Lü Yang was severely injured and barely alive, so what? Without a True Lord's intervention, he was now one of the few great divine powers in this world!

From now on, his name would be remembered in heaven and earth!

At this moment, a brilliant golden light suddenly rose in the west, seemingly finally noticing something wrong, and an invisible gaze was cast over.

In an instant, all things in heaven and earth seemed to fall into silence, all brilliance ceased, leaving only that invisible gaze scrutinizing everything, finally showing anger, staring straight at Lü Yang, instantly crushing him, breaking his bones and tendons.

Yet even so, Lü Yang still raised his head.

Under that overwhelming pressure, he stood tall.

“What can you do to me?”

Boom!

A thunderous sound exploded, the pressure in the gaze suddenly intensified countless times, but at the critical moment, it was blocked by another mighty force, dissipating into nothingness.

Two vast divine thoughts intertwined in the void:

“Fellow Daoist, in chess, each move depends on skill; overturning the board after losing a piece is not magnanimous.”

“Amitabha...”

The Holy Sect had intervened!

Lü Yang didn't know who it was, but regardless, as a false Grand Real Person who slew Vimalakirti in battle, it was enough for the Holy Sect's True Lord to step in and personally protect him!

Moreover, for the True Lords now, there was another more important matter.

At this moment, everyone suddenly felt a sense, including Lü Yang. All looked up at the Foundation Establishment Realm, at that fruit position star.

\[Long Flowing Water].

This was originally normal.

However, at this moment, for some reason, the fruit position, once high above the sky, untouchable and unreachable, suddenly changed.

It began to fall!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,321 words ]

Chapter 284: What a Grand Feast!

【Long Flowing Water】 was falling!

The fall of a Fruit Position was terrifying beyond measure.

Almost simultaneously, all cultivators practicing 【Long Flowing Water】 felt an inexplicable sense of oppression.

Above the Foundation Establishment Realm, the Bitter Sea surged.

A group of Foundation Establishment True Persons looked up and saw a somewhat blurry, blazing white light.

That light resembled a crescent moon, hazy and illusory, its true form indiscernible.

One could only sense the vast and boundless divine imagery within.

“Failed.”

Lü Yang shook his head upon seeing this.

This was clearly not the phenomenon of a successful Golden Core formation.

Although Suo Huan had gambled on that one-in-ten-thousand chance to charge toward the Fruit Position.

Unfortunately, he still fell short.

Soon, Lü Yang saw Suo Huan's figure within that arc of light.

He appeared dazed, as if encountering something inconceivable.

Immediately after, this great cultivator from beyond the heavens suddenly laughed.

He laughed loudly in mid-air, his laughter shrill and piercing.

His previously stable aura suddenly became extremely violent.

His pitch-black eyes turned blood-red.

Everyone could hear his hysterical roar:

“Too much bullying! Too much bullying!”

“Why treat me this way? My 【Huanxu Realm】 , I, Suo Huan... hahaha! Suo Huan! Suo Huan! This Dao title truly was not chosen in vain!”

“Sir! Come out!”

“I know you're watching!”

Amid his roars, centered on the slowly descending 【Long Flowing Water】 , three grand Golden Core Dharma Bodies appeared.

Suo Huan instantly recognized these three Golden Core True Lords.

They were the culprits who had presided over the Dao Seizing War and destroyed the 【Huanxu Realm】 .

In an instant, his laughter grew even more tragic.

At that time, he had thought he escaped with the help of the Realm Heaven.

Now it seemed that might not have been the case!

“Gentlemen, the main course is served.”

The True Lords' voices carried a hint of laughter, echoing in a realm imperceptible to True Persons:

“Amitabha... my Buddha is merciful. It was not in vain that we let this person go back then. Today, our merits are complete, and we can guide this blessed land back to its place.”

“This person's Metal Nature is mine.”

“Sacred Sect, stand still. Don't move recklessly. Let's divide according to the prior agreement. Otherwise, if we fall out, no one will get to eat this meal.”

“Tch.”

The three Golden Core True Lords each took their positions.

Their vast divine senses communicated, revealing that they had long established a "distribution plan."

At this moment, they simultaneously acted to restrain Suo Huan.

“Pure Land provided me with the resources of a blessed land, so after I failed, the blessed land returned to Pure Land.

The Dao Court enhanced my cultivation, allowing me to develop Metal Nature.

After my death, the Metal Nature belongs to the Dao Court.

As for the Sacred Sect, they hoped I would destabilize 【Long Flowing Water】 , perhaps even intending to bring it under their control?”

This was a gluttonous feast.

He was the main course on the table.

Pure Land, Dao Court, and Sacred Sect were the ones feasting.

Thinking of this, Suo Huan gradually ceased his manic laughter.

He had actually anticipated this outcome long ago.

From the moment he accepted support from the three factions, he had considered the possibility of failure.

Therefore, the current scene of being devoured by the three did not surprise him.

What truly drove him to despair was someone else.

In the next second, Suo Huan looked around at the three Golden Core True Lords and suddenly laughed:

“Sir, after so many years of planning, what are you still waiting for?”

Boom!

Suddenly, as if responding to Suo Huan's inquiry, an indescribably vast aura rose from the direction of the Four Seas Gate and the Dragon Palace!

“Hm?”

At this moment, the Foundation Establishment True Persons below all turned to look.

Even the three True Lords in the sky, who were dividing Suo Huan, showed expressions of surprise:

“Golden Core phenomenon?”

“Is it Tian Qiu? No, wasn't he killed by Suo Huan? Without a physical body, how can a mere soul attempt Golden Core formation? What Fruit Position doesn't require a physical body?”

In an instant, the three True Lords' thoughts raced.

Finally, they arrived at a conjecture.

Almost simultaneously, they saw the Dragon Palace of the Four Seas Gate open wide.  
From within rolled out overwhelming deathly energy.

At the center of this deathly energy was a blurry dragon shadow, slowly opening a gate.

【Netherworld】 !

What Fruit Position in the world doesn't require a physical body?

Naturally, it's the Netherworld, which governs the reincarnation of all beings.

Those with physical bodies find it difficult to enter the Netherworld.

Only souls can come and go.

However, ordinary souls are directly absorbed by the Netherworld upon reincarnation.

Yet at this moment, Tian Qiu was attempting to open a gate leading to the Netherworld!

“What is he trying to do?”

“Forming a Golden Core while opening the Netherworld... it's Ang Xiao! He wants to use the Netherworld to drag down a 【Fruit Position】 . Suo Huan was merely a decoy to mislead us?”

“Tian Qiu is the real target!”

At this moment, the three True Lords saw that as Tian Qiu's aura erupted, a celestial star above the sky shone brightly.

It was the Water Element Fruit Position 【Heavenly River Water】 .

This Fruit Position was said to "rise and fall in Qi, located in the high and bright Fire Position, with abundant water forming rain to aid the water within fire, existing only in the heavens."

Among Water Element Fruit Positions, this one was supreme!

Such a change immediately unsettled the True Lords.

They almost simultaneously attacked Tian Qiu, only to be firmly blocked by another towering dragon body.

Four Seas Gate, Dragon Lord!

This individual was a noble by birth, at the mid-Golden Core stage, with an undiminished cave heaven.

His existence could be traced back to the founding days of the Four Great Sects.

How much weight did this carry?

To put it plainly, he had even seen the Dao Master!

It's known that the current Dao Master remains hidden.

Even most Golden Core True Lords have never seen the Dao Master, nor do they know if the Dao Master is male or female.

However, the Dragon Lord had seen them.

Despite being suppressed by various factions over the years, the Dragon Lord had maintained his mid-stage cultivation, unable to break through to the later stage.

But this did not mean he was weak.

Now, as the Dragon Lord acted, his towering dragon body resembled an endless city wall, spanning between the True Lords and Tian Qiu.

It was as if he had divided heaven and earth in an instant.

The entire overseas region, with its boundless sea, responded at this moment.

Another Fruit Position star in the sky shone brightly.

**【Great Sea Water】** !

In the past, the True Dragon clan ruled rivers, lakes, and seas.

Among the six Water Element Fruit Positions, four were under their control.

**【Great Sea Water】** was once the supreme Water Element Fruit Position.

However, after the changes in the heavens, the True Dragons lost their prestige.

Not only did **【Great Sea Water】** lose its supreme status to **【Heavenly River Water】** , but other Fruit Positions were also lost.

Only one of the four Dragon Lords remained.

Describing this as a deep-seated blood feud would not be an exaggeration!

“Let's take a gamble!”

At this moment, the Dragon Lord acted, truly prepared to risk everything.

He knew that the Dao Masters of the Four Great Sects would not interfere in such matters.

With his mid-Golden Core cultivation, and with the assistance of that **【Ang Xiao】** , there might be a chance!

At this time.

As Tian Qiu opened the gate to the **【Netherworld】** , surrounded by boundless deathly energy, a tall figure with hands behind his back quietly appeared behind the gate.

From his figure, he seemed male.

Yet his face was obscured by a cloud of mist, making it impossible to see clearly.

Unlike other entities of the **【Netherworld】** , he possessed a physical body!

Although his vitality was not apparent, the solid and unwavering presence he exuded was definitely not something a soul could possess.

“What a grand feast.”

He smiled slightly.

His voice, difficult to categorize by gender or age, resounded:

“Why not let me have a share?”

**【Ang Xiao, Sun-Obscuring True Lord】** !

Not long after, True Lords across the world once again sensed his presence.

In an instant, countless True Lords turned their gazes, attempting to see through the mist covering the face of that mysterious True Lord behind the Netherworld gate.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,244 words ]

## Chapter 285: Ang Xiao Enters the Game!

Just as Suo Huan failed to seek gold and the three parties shared the spoils, 【Ang Xiao, the True Lord Who Obscures the Sun】 finally made a move, instantly turning the overseas into the focus of the world.

At the same time, some True Lords were filled with doubt.

“ 【Ang Xiao】 . Has he given up on 【Chang Liu Shui】 ?”

“Or does he firmly believe that 【Chang Liu Shui】 is safe and sound, not to be swayed by Suo Huan, and that his late-stage Golden Core status will remain unaffected?”

“Where does his confidence come from?”

This time was different from before. Previously, Chong Guang failed and was powerless to reverse the situation mainly due to lack of preparation and information disparity.

However, this time, various parties joined forces to use Suo Huan to shake 【Chang Liu Shui】 , truly intending to pull this Dao fruit from its pedestal. Even if 【Chen Tu】 's yin-yang attributes were altered and 【Chang Liu Shui】 was forcibly sealed and hidden from the world, 【Ang Xiao】 would still fall from his realm!

How could he remain indifferent?

Or has he decided to use 【Tian He Shui】 as a substitute? But can Dao fruits be so easily interchanged?

Or... is he not actually 【Ang Xiao】 ?

Does he have another scheme?

At this moment, countless True Lords were calculating and deducing, yet all heavenly secrets were obscured, and no one could discern the true cause and effect.

In a flash, the three True Lords present made their decisions.

“He must not succeed!”

Besides them, many other True Lords also took action. The scene of besieging 【Ang Xiao】 reappeared, all flying towards the overseas!

“Xuan Yuan! Ming Zhu! Yuan Xu! Assist me this once!”

The Dragon Lord's voice resounded, and after a brief pause, three more Dharma bodies rose within the Four Seas Gate, intercepting the three attacking True Lords.

“Just this once.”

“After today, Ming Zhu and the Dragon Clan owe each other nothing.”

“Eh, I'm just an old bag of bones...”

In an instant, the entire Foundation Establishment Realm became hazy. Dozens of True Lords acted, their energies intertwining, seemingly blending heaven and earth into one.

Under the influence of the Dao fruit 【Great Sea Water】 , the entire overseas underwent endless changes. Each True Lord's action brought about a phenomenon: volcanic eruptions, islands emerging, snow falling from the sky, seaweed spreading... gradually eroding the overseas space, as if boiling the sea and burning the sky!

Such phenomena continued for nearly half an hour.

The Four Seas Gate's strong resistance clearly exceeded all expectations, coupled with Tian Qiu's perfectly timed move, seeking gold simultaneously with Suo Huan.

Thus, he ultimately succeeded.

“Boom!”

With a loud bang, the gate of the Underworld was completely stabilized. Behind the door, 【Ang Xiao, the True Lord Who Obscures the Sun】 grinned and immediately reached out towards the sky.

“.Don't even think about it!”

Almost simultaneously, all True Lords erupted, their unparalleled power breaking through the overseas True Lords' blockade, separating him from 【Tian He Shui】 .

In the next moment, 【Tian He Shui】 remained unharmed.

【Chang Liu Shui】 moved.

“Tsk... this damned obstacle of knowledge again!”

Only then did the three True Lords, who had just acted most violently and were stationed overseas, realize they had inadvertently overlooked Suo Huan.

But upon realizing this, they found it strange.

“ 【Tian He Shui】 was just a decoy. He ultimately still wants 【Chang Liu Shui】 . But what does he use to trigger 【Chang Liu Shui】 ? Does he really think we haven't noticed his move on Suo Huan? It's nothing more than that 【Tian De Hui Shi Shen Shui】 , which we've already isolated its influence...”

However, in the next second, the expressions of the True Lords changed drastically.

Because under 【Ang Xiao】 's influence, 【Chang Liu Shui】 actually changed direction, plummeting straight towards the newly opened gate of the Underworld!

This was illogical!

Ang Xiao had only interacted with Suo Huan once and had given him a single 【Tian De Hui Shi Shen Shui】 , which had already been detected by the True Lords.

How did he manage this?

Among those present, only Suo Huan understood clearly. His eyes filled with hatred: “I've seen it... actually, back then, I met you, my lord!”

He had simply forgotten!

It was the day the 【Huan Xu Realm】 was destroyed! This lord, 【Ang Xiao】 , had appeared once and imparted a method to him.

“ 『Wan Ling Gui Xu Dao Jing』 !” Suo Huan gritted his teeth:

“That wasn't a deduction from the 【Huan Xu Realm】 at all. You used the name of the realm to give it to me. This Dao scripture was never a method to seek gold!”

This was the reason for Suo Huan's despair.

Because he realized he had never escaped the True Lord's control from the beginning, like a puppet on strings, always manipulated at will.

“Beast... beast!”

Understanding everything and knowing he never had any hope of seeking gold, Suo Huan, after his failure, roared in despair, overwhelmed by a sense of powerlessness, yet helpless, allowing 【Ang Xiao】 to use his cultivation for a sacrifice at this moment.

That's right, a sacrifice!

The so-called 『Wan Ling Gui Xu Dao Jing』 was essentially a method to sacrifice the entire being of a cultivator to the Dao fruit, thereby causing the Dao fruit's downfall!

“Swish swish!”

In almost an instant, Suo Huan's physical body and cultivation were burned away, leaving only a soul imbued with golden nature, barely residing in the blessed land.

At the same time, because only his soul remained.

【The Underworld】 appeared!

The souls of extraterrestrial cultivators were anomalies in this world. Naturally, 【The Underworld】 would guide them to reincarnation, and at this moment, it proactively opened its gate!

Behind this gate, there was also an 【Ang Xiao】 !

He seemed to have been prepared for a long time. Just as the gate of the Underworld opened for Suo Huan, he reached out to seize the falling 【Chang Liu Shui】 !

At this moment, time nearly stood still.

The Dragon Lord, who had intended to take a gamble, felt a chilling sensation and instinctively lowered his head, looking towards another 【Ang Xiao】 within the Dragon Palace.

To be precise, it was a clone of 【Ang Xiao】 refined using Chong Guang's Dao sin.

At this moment, he stood with hands behind his back, leisurely admiring the colors in the sky, seemingly never glancing in the Dragon Lord's direction.

The Dragon Lord closed his mountain-sized golden eyes, clinging to a final sliver of hope, and whispered:

“ 【Ang Xiao】 ... you promised me before...”

“What?”

As the words fell, 【Ang Xiao】 finally glanced nonchalantly at the Dragon Lord, his calm expression resembling someone watching a loach writhing in a pond.

“You're calling me 【Ang Xiao】 , and you still don't understand?”

“I am a True Lord of the Sacred Sect, still in the late-stage Golden Core. As everyone knows, I don't keep promises.”

In the next second, time resumed its flow. 【Chang Liu Shui】 had already arrived before the gate of the Underworld, and 【Ang Xiao】 , smiling, received it.

However, suddenly, his expression changed dramatically!

Without any hesitation, he abruptly swung his hand, trying to throw away the 【Chang Liu Shui】 to sever the connection, but it was too late—

“Boom!!!”

In an instant, a sudden change occurred!

The previously docile 【Chang Liu Shui】 suddenly erupted, like a breached dam, forcefully blasting its unparalleled power into the 【Underworld】 !

Accompanying this was a long-suppressed, ecstatic laughter:

“Hahahahahaha!”

“ 【Ang Xiao】 , do you like the gift I sent you?”

Such maniacal laughter was incredibly familiar to all the True Lords. Even 【Ang Xiao】 showed a hint of astonishment at this moment:

“Xue Fei Hong!?”

In the next second, the Dao fruit that was supposed to be 【Chang Liu Shui】 wavered, as if shedding a thin veil, revealing its true form.

“That’s not 【Chang Liu Shui】 ... it's 【Jian Xia Shui】 ?”

It was 【Qing Cheng Fei Xue, the True Lord】 !

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,341 words ]

Chapter 286: Feixue's Scheme!

At this moment, not only was 【Ang Xiao】 stunned.

Other True Lords also revealed expressions of astonishment, clearly unprepared, with only 【Zengcai Qiluo True Lord】 from the Sacred Sect remaining calm.

However, how could Qingcheng Feixue True Lord offer him an explanation?

An unparalleled force surged into the 【Netherworld】 , shaking the cycle of reincarnation with the power of the present world, almost immediately provoking resistance from the entire 【Netherworld】 .

"Rumble!"

In the next second, Qingcheng Feixue True Lord let out a muffled groan, evidently suffering backlash from the 【Netherworld】 , and the radiance of her fruit position dimmed instantly.

On the other hand, 【Ang Xiao】 's condition was even worse; as the 【Netherworld】 rampaged, his vital energy plummeted, and his entire body suddenly burst into blood blossoms—not ordinary blood, but the essence of a True Lord's Dharma body, a significant loss even in small amounts.

Yet now, 【Ang Xiao】 was bleeding profusely!

"Hahaha!"

Seeing this, Qingcheng Feixue True Lord laughed wildly again: "I knew it! I knew you hadn't mastered the 【Netherworld】 ; you were just hiding inside!"

Using the barrier of knowledge!

The 【Netherworld】 does not interfere with the present world; if 【Ang Xiao】 had truly mastered the Netherworld, he shouldn't have the ability to manipulate the present world's 【Chen Earth】 .

Previously, he told the Dragon Lord to let Tian Qiu enter the Netherworld and told Lü Yang and Suo Huan that he had a place for them in the Netherworld. Essentially, he was making grand promises and exploiting information gaps, as even he himself had "smuggled" in and was far from being able to control the Netherworld!

And now, the 【Netherworld】 was rampaging.

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord's strike caused the Netherworld to riot, initiating a comprehensive purge of "foreign entities," and 【Ang Xiao】 was immediately identified!

His injuries at this moment were caused by the 【Netherworld】 !

"So that's how it is... I was wondering why, despite 【Changliu Water】 falling, not many Foundation Establishment cultivators of 【Changliu Water】 died."

"The proclaimed closed-door cultivation was just a facade?"

At this moment, even 【Ang Xiao】 showed a look of amazement: "But disguising 【Jianxia Water】 as 【Changliu Water】 ... how did you do it?"

"How did I do it? What a joke!"

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord sneered: "What is your level of cultivation? A practitioner of 【Great Forest Wood】 , how could your understanding of water-based fruit positions compare to mine?"

"Water has no fixed form; it takes the shape of its container."

"Jianxia Water, Changliu Water, Sea Water, Heavenly River Water are essentially just variations of water. With sufficient cultivation, disguising them is not difficult."

"What? Only you are allowed to manipulate things in secret, and I'm not allowed to play along?"

"Do you really think you're the Dao Master?"

As her words fell, 【Ang Xiao】 could only shake his head helplessly and smile wryly: "Heroes of the world are indeed as numerous as carp crossing the river. I underestimated you, shrew."

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord made it sound simple.

But was 【Ang Xiao】 someone with no discernment? To deceive his eyes indicated that Qingcheng Feixue True Lord's own cultivation was incredibly profound!

"Could it be that you've cultivated a second-grade true skill?"

"Did you seize the fruit position of a certain realm and fill it into 【Jianxia Water】 ?"

【Ang Xiao】 stroked his chin with interest: "If not, how could a mere 【Jianxia Water】 allow you to progress so rapidly?"

"Moreover, how did you know about my plan?"

This was also a point of confusion for 【Ang Xiao】 . He thought his move involving Suo Huan was unknown to anyone, yet Qingcheng Feixue True Lord struck directly at the critical point.

If she hadn't known in advance that he intended to use Suo Huan to seek gold and draw 【Changliu Water】 into the Netherworld, she couldn't have schemed so precisely.

"Want to know? Come over and take a punch from me, and I'll tell you."

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord laughed heartily, 【Jianxia Water】 rose again, and her graceful figure emerged, though her punching motion was rather crude.

This was a trap she had meticulously set.

She had always been vengeful and not magnanimous. Being tricked by 【Ang Xiao】 into causing Chong Guang's death and hindering her path, how could she just retreat into closed-door cultivation?

Of course, she had to retaliate!

As for Suo Huan's plan, she was actually unaware. She set this trap simply because she believed that 【Changliu Water】 was inevitably 【Ang Xiao】's target.

Other True Lords didn't dare make such a judgment because they weren't sure of 【Ang Xiao】's true identity. So when 【Ang Xiao】 pretended to target 【Heavenly River Water】 earlier, they tried to stop him. But Qingcheng Feixue True Lord was different; from the beginning, she was certain:

This beast was definitely 【Ang Xiao】 !

She knew the Sacred Sect couldn't have any good people; if there were, they were surely in disguise! Qingcheng Feixue True Lord made her judgment based on this point.

And she held firm in her belief.

As expected, after all his scheming, 【Ang Xiao】 still chose 【Changliu Water】 and fell into her prepared trap.

"Come out of the Netherworld!"

"You obstructed my path; I will make sure your path is hopeless!"

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord laughed wildly while fiercely attacking the Netherworld's gate. Naturally, the other True Lords wouldn't mind beating a drowning dog.

However, at this moment.

"What a pity."

Suddenly, from within the Dragon Palace, the Chong Guang Dao Sin, refined into a clone by 【Ang Xiao】 , stepped forward and, with a sigh, took out a thick talisman book.

As this book appeared, a layer of illusion was lifted.

" 【Fate-Exchange Talisman Book】 !"

This treasure, once taken from the fruit position of 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 , had also been taken by 【Ang Xiao】 and hidden using the barrier of knowledge!

In the next second, the talisman book flipped open, revealing the words:

【Lü Yang is regarded as an abandoned pawn by the Sacred Sect, trapped in a deadly situation. I assist him in reversing the situation and regaining vitality.】

Boom!

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang, who had been watching the battle, felt a cause and effect fall upon him. This sensation was akin to a ritual attracting the attention of a fruit position!

Above the sky, a fruit position star shone brightly.

【Overturning Lamp Fire】 !

"We of the Sacred Sect never put all our eggs in one basket. If 【Changliu Water】 fails, we'll use 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 as a substitute."

Though he said this, 【Ang Xiao】 still sighed inwardly.

According to his plan, the ideal development would be to simultaneously activate 【Changliu Water】 and 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 , drawing them into the Netherworld.

In this way, at worst, he could take one, and with luck, he could take both, making a huge profit. But after being schemed against by Qingcheng Feixue True Lord, not only was he seriously injured, but 【Changliu Water】 was hopeless, and even 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 was a hasty move without sufficient assurance.

'Fortunately, I have preparations.'

Even now, being purged by the 【Netherworld】 , his Dharma body damaged, and under pressure from multiple True Lords, 【Ang Xiao】 still maintained a calm expression.

'That shrew directly attacked the Netherworld and was supposed to suffer backlash.'

'But the backlash she suffered was much less than mine, partly because I was in the Netherworld, making the situation more severe, and partly because of Suo Huan!'

'Previously, I arranged for Suo Huan to sacrifice himself to 【Changliu Water】 , but he was instead used, sacrificed to that shrew's 【Jianxia Water】 , and used as a shield. Part of the Netherworld's backlash was borne by Suo Huan, falling on that 【Lingxu Blessed Land】 .' .

'If I want to break the situation...'

At this point, 【Ang Xiao】 finally shifted his gaze downward.

He saw that amidst the battle of True Lords, a solitary figure stood trembling, seemingly sensing something, and looked up as well.

Suo Huan.

This great cultivator from beyond the heavens, who had been manipulated all his life, suddenly smiled: "Is the lord going to use me again? What else do I have that's useful?"

"Of course, you do."

【Ang Xiao】 spoke calmly, his gaze as if looking at an ant: "Your life!"

"Clang clang!"

In the next second, a brilliant sword light pierced the sky, directly stabbing through Suo Huan. Coughing up blood, Suo Huan turned to see a familiar figure.

Then he gave a bitter smile: "Fellow Daoist, you and I are truly in the same boat."

The sword's name— 【Tribulation Wave】 !

The one who killed Suo Huan was Lü Yang!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,562 words ]

Chapter 287: Eat Shit!

When Lü Yang regained his senses, Suo Huan had already been pierced by the 【Calamity Wave】 , and the mystical power of the 【Yuan Tu】 on the sword was rapidly activating.

Those killed by this sword would have all their karmic ties severed!

Originally, Suo Huan was entangled in multiple karmic connections, with various True Persons aiding him in seeking the golden nature, expecting to divide the benefits afterward.

The blessed land would return to the Pure Land.

The golden nature would return to the Dao Court.

The fruit position would return to the Saint Sect.

Moreover, the current Clear Snow True Person was using this karmic tie to transfer a portion of the backlash from the 【Netherworld】 onto Suo Huan.

However, now that Suo Huan was dead, under the mystical power of the 【Yuan Tu】 , the karmic ties were shattered, and Suo Huan's remaining blessed land and golden nature became ownerless, making it impossible for Clear Snow True Person to transfer the backlash, forcing her to endure it herself, resulting in losing the benefits and gaining additional costs!

This was 【Ang Xiao】 's trump card.

Why did he help Lü Yang refine the 【Calamity Wave】 ? Besides leveraging Lü Yang's predicament to create a ritual and attract the attention of the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 .

More importantly, it was for the mystical power of the 【Yuan Tu】 !

He used Suo Huan's hand to refine this spiritual sword, intending to use this karmic-severing mystical power at the critical moment to set up this situation!

"Do you want to continue fighting me, or go seize the blessed land and golden nature?"

【Ang Xiao】 laughed loudly, but before he finished speaking, most of the True Persons had already withdrawn and reached for the 【Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land】 and Suo Huan's golden nature.

The Pure Land and Dao Court immediately chose to abandon targeting Ang Xiao, as the 【Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land】 and Suo Huan's golden nature were originally

designated for them, and if taken by others, they would suffer a total loss. As for suppressing 【Ang Xiao】 , that was a long-term interest.

Long-term interests meant they could be postponed.

But the 【Spiritual Ruins Blessed Land】 and Suo Huan's golden nature were short-term interests, and once missed, they would be gone, so how could they be easily abandoned?

Moreover, wasn't 【Ang Xiao】 already injured?

That should be enough; it's not like they could kill 【Ang Xiao】 , so why offend him to death? Comparatively, it's more practical to gain more benefits.

"Indeed... I still have to rely on myself!"

Above the sky, Clear Snow True Person sneered coldly upon seeing this but showed no intention of stopping, instead attacking 【Ang Xiao】 even more frantically!

Seeing this, 【Ang Xiao】 's expression changed: "Shrew! Madwoman!"

He never expected that after seeing the other True Persons withdraw, Clear Snow True Person, knowing her realm was lower than his, would still entangle with him!

It should be noted that the reason Clear Snow True Person could trap him and severely injure him this time was partly because he was still enduring the backlash from the 【Netherworld】 , and partly because various True Persons joined forces. But now, only this madwoman remained; how could she fight him?

Didn't she understand the cost-benefit analysis?

Didn't she see that even other Saint Sect True Persons had withdrawn?

However, since Clear Snow True Person acted this way, 【Ang Xiao】 had no choice but to also frantically channel his power and continue to stalemate with her.

But after all, 【Ang Xiao】 's cultivation was higher.

Therefore, in the tug-of-war between the two, he eventually gained the upper hand, and the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 continued to fall step by step, flying toward the gate of the 【Netherworld】 .

However, he also paid a price.

Below, the Dao Sin of Chong Guang, refined into a clone by 【Ang Xiao】 , had already begun to burn, and even the fruit position treasure 【Life Exchange Talisman Book】 was fully sacrificed by him, meaning that if he didn't obtain the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 after this battle, there would be no second chance.

Because over the years, only Chong Guang had confirmed the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 .

Without his Dao Sin as a medium, the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 would no longer cast its gaze, and trying to pull it into the Netherworld again would be several times more difficult.

At least until the arrival of the millennium great tribulation, it would be impossible.

'Only victory is allowed, no defeat!'

【Ang Xiao】 's gaze was cold; he had already placed all his chips on the table, and although Clear Snow True Person was still obstructing, it was to no avail.

Meanwhile.

'Beast...'

Lü Yang held the 【Calamity Wave】 with an ugly expression, and what made him more aggrieved was that even this curse he only dared to mutter in his heart, not aloud.

'The 【Calamity Wave】 has a problem; after all, it's related to a True Person, so how could there be no hidden tricks? There might even be more than one. Unless I use the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 to cleanse it, I don't dare to use it again. Who knows if it will kill me with one strike?'

This was even unrelated to the sword spirit's will of the 【Calamity Wave】 itself.

【Ang Xiao】 's hidden tricks had completely exceeded the limits of this semi-true treasure, and even if the sword spirit was unwilling, it couldn't resist his manipulation.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn't help but look up.

At this moment, Suo Huan was already dead, his soul scattered, and the blessed land and golden nature were being divided and snatched by various True Persons, so no one paid attention to this small figure.

Yes, a small figure.

That was Suo Huan's last words before his death, and that sigh still echoed in Lü Yang's ears: "We small figures can only go with the flow."

"If we choose correctly, we might rise with the tide."

"If we choose wrongly, we'll be buried at the bottom of the sea."

"Fellow Daoist, take my advice and give up. You can't fight those big figures in the sky. It's good enough to escape death this time and live a peaceful life."

"Foundation Establishment completion, five lifetimes of lifespan, over a thousand years of time isn't bad."

"Don't make the same mistake as me..."

When he left this last sentence, Suo Huan's tone was very calm.

Was he relieved? Lü Yang didn't think so; he felt it was numbness, despair, the bitter sea was hard to cross, and he thought seeking the golden nature was just aiming too high.

However, after a moment of silence, Lü Yang laughed.

The bitter sea was hard to cross? Heaven's will was hard to defy?

'Suo Huan, fellow Daoist, in the next life, I'll help you cross!'

The next second, Lü Yang looked at the still-fighting 【Ang Xiao】 and Clear Snow True Person, turned his sword horizontally, and placed it on his neck.

"Hmm!?"

Almost simultaneously, 【Ang Xiao】 sensed something and suddenly turned to look at Lü Yang.

His ritual to attract the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 was based on "helping Lü Yang reverse a certain death situation," with many karmic ties on Lü Yang.

However—

'What if I die?'

At this moment, Lü Yang's mind was clear. If he died, it would mean the "reversal failed," the ritual would collapse, and the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 would naturally hide again!

This was undoubtedly something 【Ang Xiao】 didn't want to see. He had already paid so much; how could he fail at the last moment?

Therefore, soon, a voice floated over:

"Young friend, what do you want?"

【Ang Xiao】's tone remained calm, thinking Lü Yang had just seen the situation clearly and was raising his price, so he straightforwardly got to the point.

"I want Suo Huan's golden nature, the amount doesn't matter."

Lü Yang was equally calm, replying indifferently.

"Okay!"

【Ang Xiao】 didn't bargain, nodded directly, and while suppressing Clear Snow True Person, he diverted his attention to snatch a trace of golden nature.

Because he wanted very little, the True Persons gave him this face, and after doing all this, 【Ang Xiao】 no longer paid attention to Lü Yang, directly withdrawing his gaze. In his view, Lü Yang couldn't possibly commit suicide; he was just taking advantage of the situation, and since he was satisfied, Lü Yang would naturally be sensible.

He even admired Lü Yang's opportunistic behavior.

'He has means, cunning, and courage—a talent, useful in the future.'

【Ang Xiao】 thought, pondering how to use Lü Yang as a pawn in the future, after all, strictly speaking, this time he saved Lü Yang's life.

What was a trace of golden nature? It could be made up later.

The life-saving karma, he would make Lü Yang repay it for a lifetime!

However, the next second.

"Poof!"

Just as he withdrew his gaze, 【Ang Xiao】's expression stiffened, and the calm expression he had maintained finally showed a rare look of shock and anger.

Turning back, he saw Lü Yang grinning coldly at him.

Suo Huan's trace of golden nature had long been collected by him, and the 【Calamity Wave】 directly cut his neck, severing the karmic ties on him!

"Boom!"

Almost simultaneously, the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 , which had been falling, immediately lost its light, re-hidden, and directly escaped 【Ang Xiao】 's grasp!

"Courting death!!!"

For the first time, 【Ang Xiao】 's voice carried intense anger, exploding in the world, with terrifying pressure that even made True Persons tremble.

However, Lü Yang was not afraid at all. He raised his head proudly and gave the sky a middle finger.

Want the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 ?

Want the 【Long Flowing Water】 ?

Want to become the Dao Lord?

"Eat shit!"

This time, Lü Yang didn't hide it at all, nor did he mutter in his heart, but directly cursed aloud, and then, with a loud bang, he resolutely self-destructed!

"Book of a Hundred Lifetimes!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 288 : The Tenth Lifetime, Entering the Sword Pavilion!**

[ 1,558 words ]

Chapter 288: The Tenth Lifetime, Entering the Sword Pavilion!

After a long while, Lü Yang finally calmed his agitated emotions.

To be honest, listening to 【Ang Xiao】's voice filled with shock and anger at the end, he truly felt exhilarated, as if all the previous frustrations had been vented.

"It's not over yet!"

"【Ang Xiao】, right? Just you wait. When I reach the late stage of the Golden Core, the first place I'll go is the 【Netherworld】. I'll remember this grudge for a lifetime!"

Lü Yang cursed for a while longer before settling down and surveying his surroundings.

For Lü Yang, this was a very subtle experience. The sky was chaotic, the earth was void, and only he stood alone in the center of this world.

The 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 slowly flipped its pages.

This was the "standby state" before each reopening of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】. However, it had always been fleeting before, so there wasn't much of a real sense.

This time was clearly different. The "standby" time had been significantly extended, and in Lü Yang's palm, the trace of golden nature from Suo Huan was flickering with a faint light, gradually merging into the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】, eventually transforming into lines of text appearing on the panel before his eyes.

【Settling experiences for "Suo Huan".】

【As the child of destiny in the "Huanxu Realm", you took on a perilous mission to resist invasions from unknown worlds, swearing to fulfill your mission.】

【You fought bravely and devised numerous strategies.】

【You grew rapidly, soon reaching the pinnacle of cultivation in the "Huanxu Realm". With the power of the masses, you finally defeated the unknown invaders.】

【Feeling triumphant, you prepared to retire with your beloved companions.】

【Then, a True Lord descended.】

【The "Huanxu Realm" was destroyed. You had no power to resist and couldn't even remember how you escaped. You felt immense pain in your heart.】

【Eventually, you arrived overseas in an unknown world. You regained your spirit and discovered the "Lingxu Blessed Land" and the "Ten Thousand Spirits Return to the Void

Dao Scripture" entrusted to you before the fall of the "Huanxu Realm". Although you vaguely felt something was off with the latter, you quickly dismissed it as overthinking.】

【You had a new goal.】

【You planned to revive the "Huanxu Realm". This goal was grand and elusive, but you were determined, willing to dedicate even a lifetime to it.】

【You still had "hope".】

【.】

Lines of text appeared, recording Suo Huan's six hundred years overseas, his mental journey, and his determination in seeking the Golden Core.

—And ultimately, his despair.

Finally, accompanied by a brilliant golden light, a brand-new talent appeared on the panel of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 . Lü Yang immediately looked over:

【You have obtained the golden talent · Puppet on Strings】

【Puppet on Strings: Seize others' fate, bear their karma, and you can hide behind their appearance, manipulating them like a puppet. No one can trace your origins.】

"Such a talent?"

Looking at the talent on the panel, Lü Yang was stunned. To be honest, he thought it would be a talent like 【Heavenly Fiend Lone Star】 or 【Suffering is a Blessing】 .

"But it makes sense."

Considering Suo Huan's life, from the moment the "Huanxu Realm" was captured by the four major sects and became a battleground for Dao-seizing, this outcome was already destined.

First, he was tricked by 【Ang Xiao】 , then divided and consumed by the Holy Sect, Dao Court, and Pure Land.

Even the vision of ascending to seek the Golden Core and rebuilding the "Huanxu Realm" was essentially an illusion given to him by 【Ang Xiao】 . It was utterly tragic.

【Puppet on Strings】 , truly lives up to its name.

"Don't worry, Daoist Suo Huan. In this lifetime, I'll help you cross over. But considering my current weak strength, it might be delayed by a few lifetimes."

Calming down, Lü Yang thought seriously. Even if he restarted a lifetime, trying to snatch someone from 【Ang Xiao】, who was at the late stage of the Golden Core, might still be a bit difficult. Considering the overseas experiences, it's more likely that he would also be turned into a fool by the Knowledge Barrier.

"Daoist Suo Huan, why don't you go ahead and pave the way for me in this lifetime, striving for the Golden Core on my behalf? When I become a True Lord in the future, I'll find a way to help you cross over!"

Lü Yang quickly convinced himself.

Immediately after, he saw the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 finally flip to the next page. Then, the golden talent 【Innate Immortal Spirit】 obtained from Chong Guang took effect.

【Please select the birthplace.】

Lü Yang focused his eyes and saw five options appearing on the interface of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 : Jiangdong, Jiangxi, Jiangnan, Jiangbei, and Overseas.

He had already planned for this.

"In this lifetime, I can't cultivate 【City Wall Earth】 again. That thing is too troublesome and too conspicuous, easily attracting the attention of various True Lords."

Besides the 【City Wall Earth】 corresponding to the "Nine Transforming Dragon Art", the only complete third-grade true technique he had was the "Mending Heaven True Scripture". This third-grade true technique corresponds to multiple fruit positions. The Mending Heaven Peak Master uses it to seek the 【Pomegranate Wood】, which he sees as a path forward.

"After all, the Mending Heaven Peak Master has already paved the way for me."

"With the Mending Heaven Peak Master's connections, being one of the four peak masters and well-informed, he must have done his research before choosing the 【Pomegranate Wood】 ."

However, even so, the Holy Sect was still too dangerous.

"This broken place, the Holy Sect, has too many pitfalls. Since I'm going to restart in this lifetime, I can't inherit my cultivation. The risks of cultivating in the Holy Sect are too high."

So, it's best to go somewhere beyond the Holy Sect's reach.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's gaze locked onto one direction.

"Jiangnan, Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion!"

"In this lifetime, if I can obtain the foundation of the Innate Immortal Spirit and join the Sword Pavilion, it should be a sure thing. After all, the Sword Pavilion values foundation the most."

Strictly speaking, the identity of an Immortal Spirit was highly valued in all four major sects. After all, Immortal Spirits were favored by heaven and earth, born at the Foundation Establishment stage, and couldn't even be killed. Otherwise, one would suffer heavenly punishment like the Blood Demon True Person. So, at most, it would be a bit troublesome in the Holy Sect, with the risk of being treated as a talent.

As for Immortal Spirits, the Sword Pavilion absolutely welcomed them.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately clapped his hands and made a decision: "In this lifetime, I'll join the Sword Pavilion as an Immortal Spirit and seek the position of 【Pomegranate Wood】!"

"Although I've been a demon for nine lifetimes, I know I'm a good person. I've long been inclined towards the righteous path!"

Soon, the panel before Lü Yang's eyes once again displayed text:

【Facing a late-stage Golden Core True Lord, you achieved what even True Lords couldn't with just a Foundation Establishment body. Your dying curses were exhilarating.】

【Current remaining pages of the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes: 91】

【Restarting a lifetime, you can choose one of the following gains from your previous life:】

Treasure.

Cultivation.

Lifespan.

Abandon all gains and randomly awaken a talent based on previous life experiences.

"I choose treasure, 【Qiantian Myriad Phenomena General Control Dharma Body】!"

This was also something Lü Yang discovered after restarting: the Dharma Body was mysterious, both a divine ability and a spiritual treasure, and didn't even require an Immortal Embryo clone as a medium!

Therefore, without hesitation, he directly exchanged for it.

The next second, the 【Qiantian General Control Myriad Phenomena Dharma Body】 with a green face, fangs, three heads, and six arms appeared, with two hands holding a treasured sword and a banner.

【Tribulation Wave】 !

【Myriad Spirits Banner】 !

The "Myriad Phenomena" of the Dharma Body could refine external objects. Lü Yang had long since refined these two most valuable possessions into it, and now they were indeed brought along!

"Not bad, not bad."

Seeing this scene, Lü Yang finally nodded in satisfaction. After all, since he planned to go to the Sword Pavilion, how could he go without a fine magic sword?

Moreover, when it comes to sword techniques and secrets, the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion was the real expert. Their combat methods dared to claim to be the best among the four sects, and it was definitely not without reason. This time, joining the Sword Pavilion, besides seeking the Golden Core, upgrading the 【Tribulation Wave】 to the "True Treasure" level was also a goal. Achieving either would be a great gain.

"And there's also 【Clarity】 !"

As for these True Lords, Lü Yang was convinced that each and every one needed to be guarded against. Therefore, a spiritual treasure that could keep him clear-headed was crucial.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang took a deep breath.

"Let's begin, the tenth lifetime!"

In this lifetime, the goal was to seek the Golden Core!

In the next moment, Lü Yang saw the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 before his eyes radiating light, and the void world in the "standby state" finally began to reveal light.

It was like opening his eyes.

Soon, a brand-new scene was reflected in Lü Yang's eyes. It was a pair of sisters with stunning looks and similar appearances, but with contrasting expressions—one cold and one warm.

"Elder sister, this sword is so big!"

Lü Yang was immediately stunned.

Although many lifetimes had passed, he still recognized the pair of sisters before him at first glance: "Sword Pavilion's Yun Miaozen and Yun Miaoqing?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,283 words ]

Chapter 289: The Yun Sisters

"Am I not human this time?"

Lü Yang frowned as he examined the nearby Yun Miaozen and Yun Miaoqing.

He swept his divine sense over himself and quickly saw his current form.

He was a sword.

The sword body was ancient and engraved with numerous seal script characters, though they held no practical meaning and seemed merely decorative.

There were even jagged notches along the edge.

Undoubtedly, this was an ordinary sword embryo.

Yet, this very sword embryo had immediately caught the attention of Yun Miaozen and Yun Miaoqing.

Naturally, it wasn't due to any concealed spiritual qualities; the sword's material and craftsmanship remained unchanged.

What truly made it different—

"Was me!"

Lü Yang withdrew his divine sense and finally understood his situation: “Because I, as an Immortal Spirit, was born within this sword embryo, it became unique.”

“I haven't even been born yet!”

Immortal Spirits aren't formed instantly; they often require a long period of nurturing.

This time also marks when an Immortal Spirit develops self-awareness.

“However, my situation is special. As an Immortal Spirit, I developed self-awareness early on, but I haven't reached the point of being born. Perhaps, for Immortal Spirits, this is an unprecedented situation. Maybe I can artificially enhance my foundation before birth!”

An Immortal Spirit is born with the Foundation Establishment Realm.

However, with so many stages within Foundation Establishment, most Immortal Spirits are only at the early stage.

The stronger the foundation before birth, the stronger the Immortal Spirit's base.

The most powerful Immortal Spirits are even born at the peak of Foundation Establishment.

In such cases, they can immediately pursue the Golden Core stage upon birth.

With good fortune, they might become a True Lord from birth!

It's uncertain whether such an Immortal Spirit has ever appeared.

“After all, such an Immortal Spirit would likely have had to save the world in a previous life to deserve such a fate.”

Born at the peak of Foundation Establishment—what immense foundation and fortune would that require?

And to remain undetected by cultivators during the nurturing period—it's practically a fantasy.

‘Fortunately, I have a cheat!’

Compared to ordinary Immortal Spirits, Lü Yang also had a Dharma Body that could move freely.

With the blessing of the Tribulation Wave, he wasn't entirely without combat power.

“Although I didn't choose cultivation after restarting, and I'm currently only at the early stage of Foundation Establishment—the weakest kind, without even a natal divine ability—using this cultivation to support the 【Heavenly Firmament's All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 , and with the enhancement of the 【Tribulation Wave】 , I should be unmatched at the early stage of Foundation Establishment.”

Unless someone else also possessed a semi-true treasure and had cultivated a second-grade true skill.

But if he really encountered such a favored child of heaven, he could simply avoid provoking them.

After all, Lü Yang wasn't someone who sought out fights.

“At the very least, with this Dharma Body, I can seek resources to nurture myself.”

While Lü Yang was contemplating, elsewhere—

“Sister, why don't we try this sword embryo?”

Yun Miaoqing pointed at the sword embryo housing Lü Yang and whispered, “I feel this sword embryo is quite good. Once it's forged properly, it might be used to craft a flying sword.”

As a Qi Refining disciple of the Sword Pavilion and a direct descendant of the Yun family, a Foundation Establishment Immortal Clan, she and her sister Yun Miaozen had come to this 【Sword-Hiding Villa】 to select suitable sword embryos in preparation for future flying sword cultivation.

This was a privilege many ordinary disciples couldn't obtain.

“It is indeed an excellent sword embryo.”

Facing her sister Yun Miaoqing's inquiry, Yun Miaozen nodded calmly, “But choosing a sword embryo also depends on mutual compatibility.”

“In other words, it's about fortune.”

“I'll go first.”

After speaking, Yun Miaozen stepped forward and approached Lü Yang.

Yun Miaoqing wasn't surprised, as she was already accustomed to this.

After all, her sister had better talent.

It was said that in her previous life, she was a disciple of a Foundation Establishment True Person within the sect and had once cultivated to the peak of Qi Refining.

Unfortunately, she failed to break through to Foundation Establishment and was forced to reincarnate.

Although she no longer had memories of her past life, her background remained, and that Foundation Establishment True Person was still present.

In comparison, she herself was lacking in many aspects.

So she had long been used to yielding many things to her sister.

She even felt proud to have such a powerful sister with a profound background.

“Got it!”

Standing before Lü Yang, Yun Miaozen formed hand seals with both hands.

A drop of fresh blood oozed from her fingertip.

She flicked it, and it landed on Lü Yang.

Lü Yang immediately felt a strange force invading the sword body.

“Is this... the Blood Sacrifice Technique?”

Lü Yang shook his head.

Clearly, Yun Miaozen hadn't considered compatibility or fortune.

She intended to forcibly refine him using her own blood and mana.

“Truly the familiar style of the Sword Pavilion.”

For someone so eager to possess his body, Lü Yang never showed any kindness.

With a thought, he directly refined Yun Miaozen's blood.

The next moment, Yun Miaozen's complexion turned slightly pale.

‘How could this be!?’

This proud daughter of the Yun family looked at Lü Yang, her delicate brows furrowed in confusion.

Could it be that this sword embryo's quality exceeded her expectations?

Was it not something a Qi Refining disciple could refine?

Thinking of this, Yun Miaozen shook her head and looked at Yun Miaoqing: "It seems our fortune isn't sufficient. This sword embryo is waiting for a more suitable master."

Yun Miaozen didn't feel anything wrong with using the Blood Sacrifice Technique to refine the sword embryo.

The Blood Sacrifice Technique was taught to her by her master and was part of her background and fortune.

In comparison, Yun Miaoqing had nothing, so naturally, her fortune was inferior.

"I see. That's a pity."

Yun Miaoqing shook her head upon hearing this.

She gently touched Lü Yang's sword body with some reluctance.

This sword was so large; she actually quite liked it.

"Clang clang!"

The next moment, a scene that made Yun Miaozen's pupils contract appeared:

That sword embryo, which she couldn't do anything with, suddenly trembled violently under Yun Miaoqing's touch.

It suddenly burst into dazzling sword light!

Immediately after, the sword embryo plunged into Yun Miaoqing's body!

"Ah—!"

Yun Miaoqing was completely unprepared.

As she watched the sword enter her body, a feeling of perfect harmony and unity of mind and spirit suddenly overwhelmed her.

When the sword light dimmed, the sword embryo had already disappeared.

Only the bewildered Yun Miaoqing remained, along with Yun Miaozen, whose expression was stiff and still carried a trace of disbelief.

The two sisters looked at each other.

“Sister, this is...”

Yun Miaoqing spoke timidly, not daring to say it aloud.

Because no matter how one looked at it, it seemed she had obtained this fortune, while her sister hadn't.

Yun Miaoqing was hesitant to admit it, but subtly... she felt a bit delighted.

However, Yun Miaoqing quickly took a deep breath and regained her composure: “It seems this sword embryo is your opportunity. Keep it well and don't waste it.”

“Okay!”

Upon hearing this, Yun Miaoqing immediately smiled.

This was the first time she had surpassed her sister and obtained something her sister couldn't.

It was hard not to be a little excited.

Yet, she didn't see that as she turned around, her sister Yun Miaoqing revealed a somewhat shadowy expression.

‘Sword merging into the body, responding on its own—that's a Spiritual Sword Embryo!’

‘If I could ask Master to refine this Spiritual Embryo into a flying sword, it might become a spiritual treasure, perhaps even usable until I reach Foundation Establishment!’

‘Why did it choose Miaoqing? Is my fortune truly inferior to hers?’

‘Impossible!’

Thinking of this, Yun Miaoqing immediately changed her perspective: ‘Obtaining the sword's recognition doesn't count as fortune. Having the ability to keep it is the true fortune!’

With this in mind, Yun Miaoqing made up her mind.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang was residing in Yun Miaoqing's dantian, resonating with her qi, and smiled with satisfaction.

Then, he began to operate his cultivation method:

“补天真经!” (Mending Heaven True Scripture)

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 290 : Heaven and Earth Forge the Dao Foundation

[ 1,334 words ]

Chapter 290: Heaven and Earth Forge the Dao Foundation

"Mm."

As Lü Yang activated the Mending Heaven True Scripture, Yun Miaoqing immediately sensed something amiss—a warm sensation spread from her lower abdomen.

In the next moment, the bottleneck that had troubled her for months—from the early to mid-stage of Qi Refining Level Three to Four—was effortlessly broken.

Yun Miaoqing looked at herself with surprise, then turned to her elder sister, Yun Miaozen, who, although already at Qi Refining Level Six, was technically still in the mid-stage.

'I'm at the same level as Sister now?'

A surge of indescribable accomplishment filled her heart, prompting Yun Miaoqing to clutch her abdomen, while Yun Miaozen's expression grew increasingly stiff.

'It must be the sword embryo!'

'Integrating with such a sword embryo and stimulating it with sword qi can break through bottlenecks. If I had obtained it, I would have reached the late stage of Qi Refining by now!'

Why wasn't it mine?

Yun Miaozen lowered her gaze, quickly suppressing her negative emotions, and regained her composure: "Alright, since you've obtained the sword embryo, let's prepare to return."

Yun Miaoqing was taken aback: "Sister, haven't you found a suitable sword embryo yet?"

"I've already found one."

Yun Miaozen shook her head calmly: "There's no time to lose. Let's head back first. This place isn't within the sect, and there's a risk of being attacked by the Demon Sect."

At the mention of the Demon Sect, Yun Miaoqing's expression turned tense.

For an ordinary disciple like her, the name of the Northern Jianghu's giant, the Primordial Saint Demon Sect, was quite intimidating.

Moreover, the Southern and Northern Jianghu had always been at odds, not just coexisting uneasily but practically being mortal enemies.

Lü Yang paid no attention to the changes in the outside world.

At this moment, he was still examining himself: "Interesting. This is the first time I've cultivated through dual cultivation instead of using the harvesting technique."

Obviously, he hadn't harvested Yun Miaoqing.

Although the Mending Heaven True Scripture was a demonic art, he had discussed it many times with Lady Ruo Xiang in his previous life, so he knew that this demonic art wasn't solely about harvesting.

Mending Heaven, as the name suggests, involves using one's own body to mend the deficiencies of heaven, gaining its favor.

Naturally, it can also be mutually beneficial.

At this moment, he and Yun Miaoqing shared such a relationship.

He used his Foundation Establishment Immortal Spirit status to accelerate Yun Miaoqing's cultivation, and ninety percent of her cultivation gains belonged to him.

"Unfortunately, Yun Miaoqing's cultivation is too weak."

Lü Yang shook his head.

To nourish himself effectively, Qi Refining was like a drop in the bucket; at the very least, it had to be a Foundation Establishment cultivator.

Although even a drop in the bucket, Yun Miaozen was actually better than Yun Miaoqing.

But Lü Yang didn't like her.

"I'm a good person, and good people naturally associate with good people. A slight difference in talent and cultivation doesn't matter to me."

Moreover, in Lü Yang's view, the talent gap between the Yun sisters wasn't significant.

At least not to the extent of Ancestor Ting You, whose abilities were beyond human compensation.

Yun Miaoqing actually had some talent; her aptitude wasn't too bad.

"Of course, more importantly, she has met me now!"

Lü Yang was fully confident that even with gradual progress and preserving potential, he could help Yun Miaoqing reach the peak of Qi Refining within ten years.

Then, he continued to examine himself.

As an Immortal Spirit, he hadn't finished nurturing himself yet.

In essence, he was a strand of Heavenly Gang Qi.

With a slight calculation, he deduced his origin.

"I am... transformed from Geng Metal Qi!"

Geng Metal, also known as [Shang Zhang], governs the authority of heaven and earth's killing force, overseeing human warfare.

In the heavens, it manifests as wind and frost; on earth, as metal and iron.

It is the yang aspect of metal.

"Truly fascinating."

Lü Yang was intrigued.

As an Immortal Spirit, his Dao foundation was naturally nurtured by heaven and earth.

Innately compatible with Geng Metal Qi, even his divine abilities stemmed from it.

"Immortal Spirit cultivation is entirely different from humans."

"Human cultivation involves first condensing one's life essence, then continuously collecting Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend energies, gathering four innate divine abilities, and finally challenging the Golden Core stage."

"However, Immortal Spirits are different. They start with innate divine abilities, gathering four innate divine abilities first, and then condensing their life essence."

"But most Immortal Spirits can't even reach the stage of condensing life essence—they either emerge prematurely or perish midway."

This imagery is quite profound.

"If we must compare, it's like a ten-month pregnancy. Immortal Spirits receive nourishment from heaven and earth, gather four innate divine abilities, and finally awaken their life essence, separating from the mother body."

During this process, the four innate divine abilities are bestowed by heaven and earth.

If the four bestowed innate abilities happen to align with a particular fruit position, and the life essence is awakened, one can directly begin seeking the Golden Core, aiming to occupy that fruit position.

In other words—

"Immortal Spirits are practically creations of heaven and earth, specifically designed to occupy fruit positions. Isn't there something suspicious behind this?"

Lü Yang pondered deeply, feeling a chill run down his spine.

Forget it; it's better not to delve too deeply.

With that thought, Lü Yang quickly refocused his mind and turned his attention to the divine ability forming within him.

This was a divine ability inherent to his Geng Metal Immortal Spirit nature, called [Master of Arms].

Lü Yang had seen Ye Guyue perform it before.

"[Master of Arms] is formed from the combination of Heavenly Gang [Geng Metal] and Earth Fiend [Shen Metal], both being the yang aspect of metal. Their union pushes the ferocity of metal to the extreme. [Master of Arms] thus emerges. This innate divine ability has both internal and external applications, corresponding to the transformations of Geng Metal in heaven and earth."

"Internally, it applies to [Arms], enhancing the power of weapons."

"Externally, it applies to [Transformation]; transformation signifies change. When activated, it can alter appearances, turning the tangible into the intangible, making it an excellent method for neutralizing divine abilities and magical treasures."

Lü Yang was meticulously comprehending his own mystical nature.

However, at that moment—

"Hmm?"

Suddenly, Lü Yang opened his eyes, sensing a divine consciousness sweeping over Yun Miaoqing, directly entering her dantian and landing on him.

Fortunately, he had already protected himself with [Tribulation Wave].

With the mysterious support of [Clarity], all cause and effect were concealed, and heavenly secrets remained hidden.

Unless a Golden Core True Lord confronted him directly, no one could discern his origin.

From the outside, he appeared merely as a slightly peculiar sword embryo.

"Which Foundation Establishment cultivator is this?"

Initially startled, Lü Yang quickly calmed down upon sensing that the other's divine consciousness wasn't strong—merely at the early stage of Foundation Establishment.

"Newbie village bullying is still the best!"

"Let me see who's spying on me..."

Lü Yang was quite satisfied.

With a thought, the [Heavenly Firmament All-Encompassing Dharma Body] instantly manifested, swiftly following the other's divine consciousness.

Meanwhile, within the Hidden Sword Villa—

Yun Miaozen casually dismissed Yun Miaoqing, instructing her to prepare the flying boat for their return to the Sword Pavilion.

Then, she entered a secluded pavilion within the villa.

Inside the pavilion, a woman in luxurious attire was leaning against the window.

"Disciple greets Master."

Yun Miaozen respectfully stepped forward to salute.

This was the greatest fortune of her life and the karmic result of her previous life's foundation—a Foundation Establishment master!

Thanks to this, she had become the current favored daughter of the Yun family, entrusted with great expectations by the family's patriarch.

As long as she broke through to the late stage of Qi Refining, she would immediately be granted the Sword Pavilion's great divine abilities.

Subsequently, she had a promising path to becoming a true disciple and advancing to Foundation Establishment.

Her future was indeed bright.

"Rise."

The woman in luxurious attire gently raised her hand, her soft voice tinged with laziness.

Her name was [Xiu Xin], an esteemed guest of the Sword Pavilion from the Ye family's outer branch.

"Have you made up your mind?"

"Yes, Master, I have."

Yun Miaozen replied solemnly: "I humbly request Master to cast a spell linking Miaoqing's fate with mine, so I can send her into the Demon Sect to aid her cultivation."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,120 words ]

Chapter 291: Everything Is for Cultivation!

As her words fell, Yun Miaozen's face was filled with determination.

She was the cherished daughter of the Yun family and had received instruction from True Person Xiuxin, cultivating the 『Heartless Ice Sword Technique』, forging a heartless sword heart.

This technique emphasized supreme heartlessness, with the sword like an icy heart.

"To master this technique, one must possess the great resolve of supreme heartlessness; familial affection, romantic love, and friendship are all hindrances to drawing the sword."

"If even the feelings for my own younger sister cannot be severed,"

"How can I speak of being heartless?"

As Yun Miaozen pondered, she even felt that if she did not act this way, she would not be considered truly heartless; not only would she fail in cultivation, but it would also obstruct her Dao heart!

Seeing her so resolute, True Person Xiuxin nodded in satisfaction. This True Person's appearance was equally exquisite, her expression as cold as Yun Miaozen's, yet she exuded a touch more dignity and maturity, like a snow-capped mountain that never melts, difficult to approach, to be admired from afar but not to be profaned.

"Truly worthy of being my disciple."

"Since this is the case, I shall act on your behalf, binding and dividing the fates of you and your sister, bestowing blessings upon you and calamities upon her, severing all sisterly ties."

"Thank you, Master."

Yun Miaozen bowed again, her heart slightly stirred. With her master's intervention, she could transfer all destined misfortunes to her sister and enjoy the fortune alone.

Henceforth, her cultivation would surely progress by leaps and bounds.

At the same time, this was also a good thing for her younger sister Yun Miaoqing, as her fortune was insufficient, lacking a good foundation from a past life like hers.

"This time, when Miaoqing enters the Demon Sect to bear calamities for me, if she can return in the future, I will surely have achieved success in cultivation, just in time to compensate her for ten years of suffering. This is the karmic fate of enduring hardship before sweetness. Even without a past life's foundation, I will help her have a future in cultivation."

"Even if she dies in the Demon Sect, it's merely a matter of reincarnation."

"By then, I should have reached Foundation Establishment, just in time to guide her. As the sister of a Foundation Establishment True Person, she would then truly have a foundation."

Wouldn't this be a win-win situation?

"Although Miaoqing may not understand, that's because her cultivation is insufficient, and her Dao heart is not firm. As her elder sister, I should plan a future for her."

Thinking of this, Yun Miaozen became even more indifferent.

This was the Sword Pavilion; without a foundation, one could hardly move. After all, who else had a Foundation Establishment master like her? This was her innate karmic fate.

If Miaoqing had karmic fate, she could also find a patron.

"By the way, Master."

Thinking of this, Yun Miaozen continued, "This time, Miaoqing obtained a spiritual sword embryo in the villa. I ask Master to retrieve it for me later."

"After all, Miaoqing is about to go to the Demon Sect. It's not appropriate for her to carry such a superior sword embryo. If it falls into the hands of those demons, wouldn't it bolster their morale? It's better for Master to take it, and I will keep it for her. If Miaoqing can return in ten years, I will personally return it to her."

True Person Xiuxin nodded, "Good."

"Your Dao heart is commendable. Since the sword embryo was obtained by your sister, it is also your karmic fate and should be used by you."

After speaking, she released her divine sense, scanning towards the distant Yun Miaoqing.

Then they heard a long sigh:

"Beast!"

As the words fell, this Sword Pavilion True Person at the early Foundation Establishment stage suddenly changed her expression, abruptly standing up, her embroidered brows tightly knit as she scrutinized the surrounding environment.

"Master?" Yun Miaozen hadn't reacted yet.

After all, this was entirely beyond the scope of Qi Refining. True Person Xiuxin had no intention of replying. With a thought, a splendid sword pill appeared in her palm.

"Break!"

In the next second, the sword light was unleashed. This time, even Yun Miaozen could see something was wrong because that sword light dissipated in mid-air.

How could this be?

For a moment, Yun Miaozen felt as if in a dream, in a fog. Looking down, she found that there was another person on the ground who looked exactly like her.

"Is that me?"

"No... that's my body!"

"Then am I a soul?"

Only then did Yun Miaozen realize that she had somehow been separated from her soul. She immediately turned to seek help from her master, True Person Xiuxin, only to witness an even more horrifying scene. She saw that her master, True Person Xiuxin, who had Foundation Establishment cultivation, had also been separated from her soul!

The Dharma Body was profound, [General Capture]!

In the next second, the master and disciple saw a tall figure.

The person was dressed in a dark robe, standing with hands behind his back. Behind him stood a majestic illusory figure with three heads and six arms, a green face with fangs, staring intently at them.

".Foundation Establishment demon!?"

True Person Xiuxin's eyes widened instantly, feeling a chill rush to her head. How could such a demon appear in Jiangnan without a sound?

How could this be!

True Person Xiuxin was not a rogue cultivator. Although she was only a guest elder of the Ye family, she had seen much and quickly recognized the illusory figure behind Lü Yang.

"[Qiantian General Capture Myriad Phenomena Dharma Body]!?"

"Someone has actually cultivated this second-grade true skill of the Demon Sect. Which Golden Core direct descendant is this? So bold and reckless, daring to act wantonly in my Jiangnan?"

True Person Xiuxin had no time to think further because Lü Yang had already arrived before the two of them. Due to their souls being captured, the two could not even think

properly, let alone resist or utter a sound. They could only watch as Lü Yang extended his palm towards their heads.

Golden Talent: Puppet Strings!

As the talent's radiance fell, both Yun Miaozen and True Person Xiuxin showed signs of confusion, dazed and unable to control themselves.

This feeling was very similar to the obstacle of perception.

Clearly feeling something was wrong, yet unable to delve deeper, unable to think seriously, they could only let Lü Yang's mana wrap around them like a spider web.

Lü Yang carefully comprehended the effect of this golden talent. If one were to describe this talent with a precise and easily understandable term—

[Hypnosis].

"Those controlled by this talent will not show any changes under normal circumstances, but as long as they are in front of me, I can activate the talent, and they will immediately be at my disposal."

What a domineering talent!

"Fellow Daoist Suo Huan, well done!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,086 words ]

Chapter 292: The Terror of the Golden Talent!

Three days later.

Lü Yang carefully contemplated the gains from his recent cultivation.

"Not bad, it was indeed effective!"

"Previously, it was for the cultivation method, so I directly tormented them. But now, it's different; killing them outright would be too wasteful of resources."

After all, Foundation Establishment True Persons could cultivate independently. For instance, this time, although True Person Xiuxin had fiercely battled with him to the

point where her Dao Foundation became unstable, she would recover in a month or two at most, without harming her foundation. By then, he could repeat the process, achieving sustainable resource exploitation.

This was even beneficial for his pursuit of gold!

"【Pomegranate Wood】 is a transformation of wood, pure gold yet belonging to wood, bearing abundant offspring. The inner chamber glows, so my cultivation aligns with its fundamental imagery!"

Of course, this was merely a coincidence.

Lü Yang chose 【Pomegranate Wood】 as his target for seeking gold in this lifetime purely for the sake of his Dao path.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang turned back.

He saw that True Person Xiuxin had already regained consciousness.

As for Yun Miaozen, she had been watching until just now.

"Alright, both of you get up."

Lü Yang extended his hand to pull up True Person Xiuxin, who offered no resistance and leaned into him, nearly lying entirely on his body.

Then, Lü Yang conjured a spiritual fire to evaporate all traces at the scene, cleaning up thoroughly. Only then did he look at the master and disciple pair with satisfaction and nod.

"What happened between us today, you must completely forget."

"Also, stop what you're doing regarding Yun Miaoqing. From now on, you must be united as sisters."

Yun Miaozen and True Person Xiuxin both nodded.

Seeing this, Lü Yang felt a sense of accomplishment. Regardless of the process, at least this time, he had done a good deed, right?

'I truly am a good person!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang looked at True Person Xiuxin again: "Tell me about the recent movements of the Sword Pavilion, and whether the Holy Sect has any major actions in Jiangbei?"

He needed to confirm the timing.

At present, Yun Miaoqing had not yet fallen into the Holy Sect. Lü Yang could only judge that the time of this life's restart was not far from his first anchor point.

'It might even be the same time, just in a different place.'

'After all, judging from Yun Miaoqing's actions, she was already setting up a scheme for Yun Miaoqing to be captured by Holy Sect disciples, then reduced to a human-shaped cultivation method point-reading machine.'

At this thought, Lü Yang heard True Person Xiuxin softly say:

"The Sword Pavilion is currently mobilizing personnel, with the Third Elder, True Person Dangmo, preparing to attack the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit, aiming to uproot this wonder."

"Oh?" Lü Yang raised his eyebrows upon hearing this.

Jiangnan Ten-Thousand-Man Pit!

'If I remember correctly, this Ten-Thousand-Man Pit was established by the Holy Sect after winning the Dao-seizing War and entering Jiangnan, later seized by the Sword Sect.'

The loss of the Jiangnan Ten-Thousand-Man Pit directly triggered the Holy Sect's "Substitute Death Yin Puppet Bubble." As a result, the Holy Sect released news that the Sect Master True Person personally acted to reclaim the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit and reached a peace agreement with the Sword Pavilion, leading to all Qi Refining disciples being ruthlessly exploited.

At the time, it didn't seem like much.

But now, looking back, Lü Yang realized there were many hidden issues. The biggest problem was the so-called Sect Master True Person personally acting!

'The Holy Sect's True Person personally entered Jiangnan to reclaim the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit?'

'Impossible!'

'Although the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit is important, it's ultimately just a wonder like the Kingdom of Qing, merely a chess piece used by Golden Core True Persons for strategic layout.'

For a mere chess piece, would the chess player personally enter the game?

This was akin to when Chong Guang destroyed the Kingdom of Qing, and the Dao Court Emperor personally led the northern expedition—something that could never happen.

As for releasing news specifically to exploit the disciples? That was even more unlikely. The Holy Sect's contribution points were entirely prepared for Qi Refining talents, useless to Foundation Establishment True Persons. Using contribution points to exploit them made no sense; at most, it was an incidental move.

Unless—

'There was something in that Ten-Thousand-Man Pit even True Persons coveted, but it was discovered early by the Sword Pavilion and seized, leading to its capture?'

At this thought, Lü Yang showed a contemplative expression.

Considering the final result of the Holy Sect and Sword Pavilion choosing to negotiate, neither side seemed to have suffered losses; the Sword Pavilion might have even gained a slight advantage.

'There's a secret behind this!'

Lü Yang's eyes flickered, but he quickly calmed down. It was impossible for him to go personally; his goal for this life had long been set.

He aimed to develop quietly, then astonish everyone!

'Hold on, use the Dharma Body to gather resources externally, then nurture the Immortal Spirit Body in one go until Foundation Establishment is complete, and then seek gold directly!'

For this, he needed many white gloves.

'The talent of **【Puppet on Strings】** is perfect for this. Let True Person Xiuxin go to the Jiangnan Ten-Thousand-Man Pit and see what secrets lie there.'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang looked at the two women again.

The next second, with a clap, he disappeared from the spot, while True Person Xiuxin and Yun Miaozen suddenly shivered.

"Hiss—!"

The two women's bodies trembled slightly, instinctively examining themselves, but felt nothing amiss. Their eyes were clear when they looked at each other.

".Miaozhen."

After a moment of silence, True Person Xiuxin suddenly shook her head: "Let's postpone the matter with Miaoqing. I have decided to accept the sect's summons."

"I will soon head to the Jiangnan Ten-Thousand-Man Pit."

"Miaoqing's matter can be handled after I return, how about that?"

Yun Miaozhen showed no change in expression upon hearing this and nodded: "Miaozhen understands; everything follows Master's orders. Miaoqing's matter can be dealt with anytime."

True Person Xiuxin nodded slightly: "Good."

From beginning to end, neither of them noticed anything unusual, not even a change in personality, yet they still made the decision Lü Yang desired.

Hidden in the dark, Lü Yang saw this and nodded in satisfaction.

"Just in case, test for a few more days."

"After confirming that **【Puppet on Strings】** is fine, let True Person Xiuxin call all her friends over, set up a nest, and then I will control them one by one."

Although **【Puppet on Strings】** had cultivation restrictions and could only control cultivators with lower cultivation than his, as long as he accumulated slowly, the potential of this talent would become increasingly terrifying in the later stages!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,463 words ]

Chapter 293: Massive Plundering

Several days later, Lü Yang confirmed that there were no issues with True Person Xiuxin.

The talent **【Puppet on Strings】** was indeed domineering. As long as Lü Yang activated this talent, regardless of True Person Xiuxin's previous attitude, she would ultimately submit.

As for Yun Miaoqing, Lü Yang did not forcibly manipulate her using 【Puppet on Strings】.

This was primarily because it wasn't necessary. Since discovering that Lü Yang could help accelerate her cultivation progress, Yun Miaoqing had devoted herself entirely to closed-door cultivation.

Especially after Yun Miaozen suggested "temporarily staying at the Hidden Sword Villa," she became even more reclusive, rarely stepping outside.

However, this suited Lü Yang's intentions perfectly.

The only discomfort he felt was that, since True Person Xiuxin also practiced the 『Heartless Ice Sword Technique』, she had no friends within the Sword Pavilion.

After all, it was well-known that this technique emphasized supreme detachment and a sword as cold as ice. Except for a few who favored this style, no one was interested in warming up to such coldness. The only person True Person Xiuxin could summon was a mid-Foundation Establishment sword cultivator.

"Currently, 【Puppet on Strings】 can only control early Foundation Establishment cultivators."

"Mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators might require my Immortal Spirit Body to reach that realm before attempting control. It's best not to take that risk."

Everything should prioritize stability!

As for entering the Sword Pavilion to control those early Foundation Establishment cultivators? That would be akin to defecating under the nose of a Golden Core True Lord—Lü Yang wouldn't dare.

Therefore, the immediate priority was to quickly elevate his own cultivation realm.

Currently, Lü Yang's Immortal Spirit Body was still at the early Foundation Establishment stage. To advance, he needed to consume a sufficient amount of Geng Metal spiritual materials. Fortunately, this wasn't too difficult.

"Boom!"

Within the Hidden Sword Villa, Yun Miaozen appeared with a cold expression, her vast spiritual consciousness enveloping the villa. She then released the powerful aura of a late-stage Qi Refining cultivator.

Lü Yang had ultimately rewarded Yun Miaozen once, allowing her to break through the bottleneck from mid-stage to late-stage Qi Refining. This made her even more devoted

to Lü Yang. However, after leaving the room, she immediately forgot about Lü Yang's existence, remembering only his instructions.

'Find an excuse to plunder the Hidden Sword Villa!'

As an affiliated sect under the Sword Pavilion, the Hidden Sword Villa was filled with Geng Metal spiritual materials. If not for the fear of alerting the Sword Pavilion, Lü Yang would have seized them long ago.

But having Yun Miaozen handle it posed no trouble.

After all, the Hidden Sword Villa wasn't even a Foundation Establishment sect; its strongest member was merely at the peak of Qi Refining and wouldn't dare oppose Yun Miaozen, who was at the late stage of Qi Refining.

Not to mention the presence of True Person Xiuxin.

Soon, Yun Miaozen's cold voice echoed throughout the Hidden Sword Villa: "Effective immediately, the Hidden Sword Villa is sealed. No one is allowed to enter or exit without authorization!"

As her words fell, True Person Xiuxin acted in a timely manner, directly taking out a handkerchief and offering it in the air. Although it was just an ordinary magical treasure, under the blessing of a Foundation Establishment True Person's status, it now covered the sky, acting like an impenetrable wall, enveloping the entire Hidden Sword Villa.

"Which senior is casting spells to seal our villa!?"

Soon, a figure soared from the center of the Hidden Sword Villa, his voice filled with fear as he flew over almost immediately.

The newcomer was an elderly man in a dark robe.

Although he possessed peak Qi Refining cultivation, it was evident he hadn't practiced any great divine abilities. His cultivation was average, and his appearance showed signs of aging.

"You are..."

Upon seeing Yun Miaozen, the old man was slightly stunned. Soon, his expression turned solemn as he recognized her as a disciple from the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion who had come to select sword embryos.

"Yun Miaozen of the Jade Pivot."

Yun Miaozen stood with her hands behind her back, smiling coldly: "I received a tip-off that the Hidden Sword Villa is colluding with the Jiangbei Demonic Path, intending to plunder disciples of our Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion!"

"What!?"

Upon hearing this, the old man in the dark robe nearly popped his eyes out.

Colluding with the Jiangbei Demonic Path!?

This was a grave accusation! In the Jiangnan region, colluding with the Demonic Path was absolutely unacceptable. Once discovered, it would undoubtedly lead to execution!

Seeing True Person Xiuxin beside Yun Miaozen, the old man dared not harbor any dissent. He immediately bowed and said loudly: "We are innocent! Our Hidden Sword Villa has served the upper sect for generations, never harboring any improper intentions. How could we possibly collude with the Demonic Path? I implore the upper sect to investigate thoroughly!"

Upon hearing this, Yun Miaozen narrowed her beautiful eyes: "Are you implying that I have wronged you?"

"I wouldn't dare..."

Before the old man could explain, Yun Miaozen waved her hand: "No need to say more. Since I'm here, I naturally have the confidence to find the demon."

'By now, they should have arrived.'

Soon, a loud explosion was heard within the Hidden Sword Villa, and demonic energy soared into the sky. The previously composed old man turned pale with fright.

There really was a demon!?

Yun Miaozen, however, was not surprised.

After all, the demon within the Hidden Sword Villa had been lured there by True Person Xiuxin, who had secretly manipulated cause and effect to attract them, intending for them to abduct Yun Miaoqing.

"Damn! How could this happen?"

In the midst of the soaring demonic energy, a disciple of the Sacred Sect looked around with a grim expression. At first glance, he appeared menacing, but his eyes were filled with fear.

'No, why am I so greedy?'

'I originally only planned to rob a few low-level disciples of the Sword Pavilion at the edge of Jiangnan. How did I inexplicably end up at the Hidden Sword Villa?'

'...Not good!'

Realizing this, the Sacred Sect disciple's face changed drastically: "It's a puppet..."

"Clang clang!"

In the next moment, True Person Xiuxin flicked her finger, sending out a sword light that instantly took the lives of all the Sacred Sect disciples present.

"Jiangbei demons, everyone has the right to kill them."

Yun Miaozen's expression remained calm as she looked at the old man in the dark robe, who hurriedly explained: "Upper sect, please understand, we truly had no prior knowledge..."

"So what?" Yun Miaozen shook her head: "Even if you were unaware beforehand, it's still a dereliction of duty. This time, I discovered it, so it's fine. But if these demonic cultivators had successfully abducted our Sword Pavilion disciples, and it was investigated afterward, you would still be held accountable."

"This..."

The old man's expression grew increasingly bitter upon hearing this. However, after Yun Miaozen finished speaking, she fell silent and stared at him with wide, beautiful eyes.

Hmm?

After a moment of silence, the old man lowered his voice and said: "Since the demon has been eliminated, is there a possibility of not pursuing this matter further?"

"That depends on you."

Yun Miaozen said indifferently: "Harboring a demon is a significant crime. To prove your innocence, you must identify the most critical issue."

Upon hearing this, the old man's eyes shifted:

"Reporting to the upper sect, recently, our villa acquired a batch of spiritual materials and sword embryos for refining swords. These demons might have been after them. They may have tampered with those materials... Could the upper sect take them away and examine them thoroughly on our behalf?"

After he spoke, Yun Miaozen finally nodded slightly: "That is indeed a crucial issue."

Inside a quiet room in the Hidden Sword Villa.

Yun Miaozen entered the room carrying a heavy storage bag and immediately saw Lü Yang at the desk.

"Who's there!?"

Yun Miaozen was initially startled, but upon seeing Lü Yang's appearance and meeting his gaze, her eyes filled with confusion, and she quickly understood everything.

In the next moment, she bent down cautiously, approached, and presented the storage bag to Lü Yang: "Master, I've already inspected the Hidden Sword Villa. All the Geng Metal spiritual materials are here. There are no more. To find more, we might have to search the surrounding sects."

"Ah!"

Lü Yang then stood up and took the storage bag.

"Well done."

After counting the Geng Metal spiritual materials in the storage bag, Lü Yang nodded in satisfaction. With a thought, he sent them all into his Immortal Spirit Body.

However, this was still not enough.

A mere Hidden Sword Villa, without even a Foundation Establishment cultivator, had accumulated Geng Metal spiritual materials that only accelerated his progress by about ten percent. He needed more.

"Did you complete the task I assigned you earlier?"

"Yes, Master."

Yun Miaozen replied softly: "I've already sent a message to the patriarch. I'm currently the most valued disciple of the Yun family. Once the patriarch receives the message, he will surely come."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang smiled.

The first fish had taken the bait.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,186 words ]

## Chapter 294: The Secret of the Mass Grave

Ever since he decided to join the Sword Pavilion, Lü Yang had firmly resolved to use the **【Puppet Strings】** to completely control the Yun Family Ancestor.

The reason was simple.

Although the Yun Family had fallen into decline, and the Yun Family Ancestor was merely at the early stage of Foundation Establishment, the family's origins were notable, having once been prominent.

The Yun Family had produced a former Sect Master of the Sword Pavilion, a Golden Core True Lord. Unfortunately, that True Lord perished during a millennial catastrophe, defeated by a mid-stage Golden Core True Lord from the Holy Sect. The opponent's profound cultivation not only destroyed his cave heaven but also prevented his soul from escaping.

Since then, the Yun Family had declined.

By the time it passed down to the current Yun Family Ancestor, they had completely become a Foundation Establishment Immortal Clan, and even that status was now unstable.

Nevertheless, there remained a trace of incense affection.

Being a direct descendant of a former Golden Core True Lord might not matter in the Holy Sect, but in the Sword Pavilion, it was a significant advantage.

At the very least, the Yun Family Ancestor was qualified to have an audience with the Sect Master!

The Sword Pavilion differed from the Holy Sect, where True Lords often secluded themselves, and affairs were typically managed by Great True Persons like Chong Guang, who acted as acting Sect Masters.

However, in the Sword Pavilion, True Lords personally managed affairs.

For the Yun Family Ancestor, merely at the early stage of Foundation Establishment, to have an audience with a True Lord was undoubtedly due to the legacy of the deceased Yun Family True Lord. Lü Yang did not believe otherwise.

'In previous lifetimes, when the Yun Family Ancestor brought the heavenly treasure 【Heavenly Mechanism Instrument】 to reincarnate into the Refinement Secret Realm, I sensed something was amiss.'

At first, he didn't notice, but the more he thought about it, the stranger it seemed. With so many Foundation Establishment True Persons to choose from for reincarnation, why select someone as weak as the Yun Family Ancestor? Moreover, granting him the rare treasure 【Heavenly Mechanism Instrument】 almost guaranteed his success. Without Lü Yang's intervention, the Yun Family Ancestor would have succeeded effortlessly—a free merit.

This indicated that while the Yun Family Ancestor might lack strength, he possessed significant connections.

And that was precisely what Lü Yang needed in this lifetime.

Several days later, accompanied by a loud noise from the sky, a streak of escape light flew swiftly and landed steadily above the Hidden Sword Villa.

Soon, the escape light dispersed.

The white-haired, aged Yun Family Ancestor stepped out, his divine sense immediately locking onto Yun Miaozen. Seeing her unharmed, he breathed a sigh of relief.

"Greetings, Ancestor."

Yun Miaozen respectfully stepped forward and presented a pill: "This is a longevity pill I recently acquired; please accept it, Ancestor."

The Yun Family Ancestor was gratified: "Miaozen, you are thoughtful."

With that, he accepted the pill. Seeing Yun Miaozen's expectant gaze, he tilted his head back and swallowed it.

Although the so-called longevity pill was useless to him, it was a token of Yun Miaozen's filial piety, and he didn't want to disappoint her. After taking the pill, he continued: "What about the demonic cultivator you mentioned in your letter? Has True Person Xiuxin captured him?"

"He has been captured."

Yun Miaozen nodded: "Master fought him fiercely; I couldn't intervene. Now, the demon has been firmly subdued by Master."

"That's good."

The Yun Family Ancestor was relieved. Since True Person Xiuxin's cultivation was similar to his, and she could handle it, he should be fine too.

"Then take me to him."

"This way, Ancestor."

Yun Miaozen led the Yun Family Ancestor to a quiet room. Upon opening the door, the Yun Family Ancestor stepped in and was immediately stunned.

Inside the room.([Ranobes][1])

A young man in a dark robe stood intently at a desk, drawing on a piece of yellow paper with his finger as a pen.

True Person Xiuxin stood silently beside him, exhaling a burst of intense fire, melting various Geng Metal spiritual materials into a radiant golden spiritual ink. Lü Yang stirred it casually, then meticulously painted it onto the yellow paper, forming a sharp talisman resembling a long sword.

"Clang! Clang!"

As the talisman was completed, the soft, thin talisman paper emitted a metallic sword cry, releasing a sword aura that astonished even the Yun Family Ancestor.

"Finally done!"

Lü Yang nodded in satisfaction. After restarting, he finally had a leisurely life, allowing him to revisit the talisman techniques he had previously neglected due to time constraints.

This 【Yuan Tu Treasure Talisman】 was the result of his recent research, recreating the sword aura of the 【Tribulation Wave】 through talismanic means.

Besides Lü Yang's own talismanic expertise, he also relied on his innate divine ability 【Master of Arms】 as a Geng Metal Immortal Spirit in this life. This ability could transform all things, aiding in alchemy, talisman crafting, and artifact refining.

"It's a pity that my world-shocking wisdom hasn't been fully utilized yet."

"This 【Yuan Tu Treasure Talisman】 took considerable time, yet its power is only a tenth of the 【Tribulation Wave】 , sufficient only against early-stage Foundation Establishment."

Of course, talismans rely not on quality but quantity!

'The banner spirits within the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner suffered heavy losses in the previous life. It's time to recruit new members at Skeleton Mountain and restart the industrial production line of talismans.'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang finally looked up.

Only then did the Yun Family Ancestor, who had been standing stiffly since entering the room, regain the ability to move.

"Impossible!"

The Yun Family Ancestor's pupils contracted as he clutched his stomach, realizing that the longevity pill he had just swallowed had become a poison restraining him!

'Why!?'

He turned to Yun Miaozen, unable to believe that his most trusted family disciple would poison him!

However, Yun Miaozen didn't even glance at him. Instead, she cautiously approached the desk, gracefully bowed, and slipped under it to receive her reward. This was purely for cultivation purposes, seeking Lü Yang's help to break through her bottleneck.

'Demon! This person is definitely a demon!!!'

For a moment, the Yun Family Ancestor couldn't believe his eyes. He was convinced that only a demon could orchestrate such events!

Yet, he couldn't escape.

The 【Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 manifested behind Lü Yang, its aura far surpassing the early stage of Foundation Establishment, prompting the Yun Family Ancestor to curse inwardly:

'With such cultivation, you still set a trap for me and poisoned me, beast!'

The outcome was inevitable.

The Yun Family Ancestor was directly subdued by Lü Yang. A 【Puppet Strings】 talisman was applied, and soon, the resentment on his face transformed into loyalty.

"It's a pity that Xin An is not here."

Lü Yang shook his head. Chen Xin'an's true spirit was still slumbering within the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, unlikely to recover for another decade or so.

Since he couldn't perform a soul search, Lü Yang asked directly:

"How much do you know about the secret of the Jiangnan Mass Grave?"

To Lü Yang's surprise, the Yun Family Ancestor was momentarily stunned, then nodded: "Reporting to Master, I know everything."

Everything!?

Lü Yang's eyes lit up. It seemed he had chosen the right person. With the Yun Family Ancestor's connections in the Sword Pavilion, he indeed knew the inside story!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,458 words ]

Chapter 295: What a Bunch of Sword Seedlings!

A Great Realm Heaven with a fruit position!

Before the Yun Family Ancestor even finished speaking, Lü Yang immediately grasped the importance of the Mass Grave in Jiangnan. After all, a Great Realm Heaven was equivalent to a new Tier-2 True Art!

"Daoist Dangmo is our Sword Pavilion's Third Elder. He reached the late Foundation Establishment Realm early on and has already attained the cultivation level of a Great Daoist. He's been planning to claim a fruit position for some time. However, the Great Realm Heavens currently under the Sword Pavilion mostly offer Tier-2 True Arts that no longer meet his requirements. Only this newly discovered one suits him perfectly."

"That's why this operation is led by Daoist Dangmo."

"And, most likely, the Demon Sect hasn't yet noticed anything unusual about the Mass Grave. So Daoist Dangmo intends to strike first."

Through the Yun Family Ancestor's explanation, Lü Yang quickly learned the secret behind the Mass Grave.

To understand it fully, one had to trace it back to the Mass Grave's former identity—a small Realm Heaven that had once been seized by True Sovereigns from various factions for their Dao-seizing battles.

That small Realm Heaven had an extraordinary origin.

Although it had no Foundation Establishment cultivators and was only fit for Qi Refining disciples to contest, it was actually a subordinate realm of another Great Realm Heaven.

Its name was 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

The former name of the Jiangnan Mass Grave was 【Falling Mortal Realm】 . Typically, once cultivators in the 【Falling Mortal Realm】 reached their peak, they would ascend to the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

However, after it was forcibly taken and turned into a Dao battlefield, the 【Falling Mortal Realm】 was cut off from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 . A day or two might not have mattered, but after ten or twenty years, the cultivators in the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 sensed something was amiss and sent people down to investigate.

As it turned out, they walked right into a trap.

The cultivators from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 were not weak. Their cultivation level was equivalent to Foundation Establishment, though they called it “Human Immortal” instead.

Unfortunately, that particular Human Immortal was not lucky.

That very day, Daoist Dangmo of the Sword Pavilion happened to pass by. When the other party attempted a soul search upon seeing him, they were swiftly suppressed and captured by Daoist Dangmo.

And so, the secret of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 could no longer be hidden.

“According to the captured one, the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 is a superior Great Realm Heaven, a dwelling place of immortals and deities, structured with five ranks of immortals encircling the Heavenly Court, each with their roles.”

“The five ranks of immortals are: Heaven, Earth, Human, God, and Ghost.”

“Lower realm cultivators who ascend have their physical bodies destroyed, leaving only their souls purified—this makes them Ghost Immortals, granted fiefs to govern lands and called God Immortals.”

“When their merits are complete and their bodies are reformed through incense and wish power, they return to the human path as Human Immortals.”

“Traversing the Three Mountains and Five Peaks, they dwell in the world but do not govern it—these are the Earth Immortals.”

“With achievements in the Dao and deeds on Earth, they receive the Heavenly Edict and enter the Heavenly Court to rule both world and heavens—these are the Heaven Immortals.”

As for what lay beyond the Heaven Immortals, the captured Human Immortal said no more. But Lü Yang could already guess the corresponding cultivation stage.

‘Most likely the True Sovereign Realm!’

Lü Yang pondered this. No wonder a single Jiangnan Mass Grave had stirred the attention of both the Sword Pavilion and the Saint Sect’s True Sovereigns—the value of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 was evident.

After all, it was a Great Realm Heaven containing a fruit position. For True Sovereigns, it was a grand feast. Even leftovers from that banquet could satiate Foundation Establishment cultivators. Sadly, back when this first emerged, Lü Yang’s cultivation was too low. He couldn’t even catch wind of such matters, let alone participate.

With that thought, Lü Yang’s mind came alive.

“A Great Realm Heaven! If I can ride this wave and get inside to loot it thoroughly, it would definitely accelerate the nurturing of my Immortal Spirit Body!”

But how to get in?

Lü Yang’s eyes turned, and he quickly formed an idea:

‘I can’t show my face in the Sword Pavilion, so getting in that way is impossible. But if that route’s blocked... I can use the Saint Sect!’

‘As long as I inform the Saint Sect of the Mass Grave’s secret ahead of time and send word to True Person Chong Guang, once the Saint Sect’s True Sovereigns confirm my intelligence, I can establish contact. Then I’ll say... I’m a reincarnated Saint Sect True Person, now infiltrating the Sword Pavilion anonymously!’

Although he was currently in the Sword Pavilion, he had always been a Saint Sect member at heart!

More importantly, in his past life, True Person Chong Guang had told Lü Yang how to contact him. A specially made Flying Message Spirit Scroll would go directly to his hands.

That alone should be enough to gain Chong Guang’s trust.

‘Let’s go with that!’

With that decision, Lü Yang sprang into action. He used his magic power to ignite the prepared Flying Message Spirit Scroll, watching it turn into a beam of spiritual light shooting up into the sky.

Only then did he let out a long breath.

At the same time, Yun Miaozen, who had been kneeling and cultivating under the desk for a long while, also emerged, wiping her mouth. Her Qi Refining Realm cultivation had clearly advanced further.

Immediately after, Lü Yang's expression turned solemn.

If he intended to get a piece of the action from the Mass Grave incident, he couldn't afford to improve his strength at a snail's pace—he needed to speed things up.

'At the very least, I need to restore my cultivation to mid-Foundation Establishment before taking action!'

With that, Lü Yang turned to the Yun Family Ancestor, Yun Miaozen, and True Person Xiuxin: "Is there any way to obtain more Geng Metal spiritual materials?"

The three exchanged glances.

Then True Person Xiuxin softly said, "Replying to Master, that's actually not too difficult... we just need to find a few more forces that are colluding with the Jiangbei Demon Sect."

"You can find them?"

"I can make arrangements."

The Yun Family Ancestor thought for a moment and said, "As long as we put the word out that we're investigating demonic forces, the nearby sects will all be on edge."

"Using that as a pretense, we should be able to squeeze plenty of spiritual materials from each one."

Lü Yang: "..."

"Isn't that a bit too high-profile?" Lü Yang hesitated—not out of kindness, but because he worried this might attract the Sword Pavilion's attention.

After all, extorting subordinate sects like this didn't seem very righteous.

But the next second, the Yun Family Ancestor looked at him in astonishment: "Master, what's so high-profile about that? It's just routine procedure."

“Huh?”

Lü Yang was dumbfounded. Seeing this, the Yun Family Ancestor explained, “In Jiangnan, our Sword Pavilion didn’t stop these forces from rising up, which means they owe us a karmic debt. Now’s the perfect time to settle it—it’s doing them a favor, really. What’s there to fuss over?”

You call this repaying karma?

Lü Yang was speechless. In Jiangbei, the Saint Sect called this robbery—or more politely, “shaking down the countryside.” He hadn’t expected this interpretation.

The righteous path truly was different.

With the Yun Family Ancestor’s explanation, Lü Yang finally understood. In Jiangnan, most sects that managed to rise did so through links with Jiangbei.

It was common knowledge that open trade led to profit.

These forces might not collaborate with the Saint Sect, but they definitely had to deal with Jiangbei, transporting goods and making their first fortune that way.

Yet according to the Sword Pavilion’s standards, that counted as colluding with the Demonic Path.

Normally, the Sword Pavilion would turn a blind eye. But when needed, they’d pull this out to “settle karma.”

It was an old trick—allow local forces to grow, knowing growth required Jiangbei contact. Contact meant demonic collusion. Ignore it until the sects are fattened up, then strike and claim moral high ground.

Meanwhile, Sword Pavilion disciples only needed to focus on sword training.

As for pills, magical tools, talismans—like the Hidden Sword Villa—they left those to subordinate sects to handle as they pleased.

Others hoarded grain, they hoarded weapons. Their allies were the granary.

This was even more extreme than the Saint Sect. The Saint Sect only descended from the mountains to rob when broke. The Sword Pavilion drained Jiangnan dry.

And they did it beautifully.

Eliminating evil and upholding justice—the grand moral cause. No one could find fault.

Once Lü Yang fully understood the Sword Pavilion's operations and how all of Jiangnan functioned under it, he couldn't help but sigh:

"What a bunch of sword seedlings!"

Looks like I'll have to reform and develop the Sword Pavilion properly—to return it to the righteous path!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,248 words ]

## Chapter 296: The Li Clan of Sea Harvesting

As a bona fide True Person of the Sword Pavilion, even if the Yun Clan's Ancestor was not particularly strong, he was still an absolute behemoth to the minor Qi Refining sects in the outside world.

Therefore, not long after his words were disseminated, various sects arrived promptly.

"Dan Yuan Sect, Myriad Formations Hall, Spirit Treasure Institute, Beast Taming Sect, Dao Talisman Gate, Wine Immortal Sect, Spirit Plant Valley—good heavens, the myriad arts of cultivation are all represented here!"

Lü Yang felt his scalp tingle. According to the Yun Clan's Ancestor, these forces were more or less all supported by the Sword Pavilion. The entire Jiangnan region was predominantly composed of such sects, deeply versed in the myriad arts of cultivation but not adept at combat, thus relying on the Sword Pavilion's protection.

This was evident from the structure of Jiangnan.

In Jiangbei, not to mention Foundation Establishment sects, there were even one or two Golden Core sects. But in Jiangnan? There wasn't a single Golden Core sect!

This governance model had its pros and cons.

The downside was the lack of manpower under their command; Jiangnan always had to rely on the Sword Pavilion itself. In contrast, in Jiangbei, the Holy Sect could at least issue orders to summon various cultivators.

However, the advantages were significant. By dedicating the entire Jiangnan region to support the Sword Pavilion alone, not only had the Pavilion's power grown to an

astonishing extent, but Jiangnan had also become exceedingly prosperous. In terms of resource cultivation and utilization, it could even outmatch the other three regions.

Consequently, Lü Yang soon found himself receiving gifts in abundance.

“Thirteen sects—after scouring through all thirteen, I've finally managed to push my Immortal Spirit's nurturing progress to seventy percent!”

With just the final thirty percent remaining, he would achieve perfection in the early Foundation Establishment stage.

At that point, as long as he integrated one more strand of Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend into his Immortal Spirit, he could naturally break through to the mid-Foundation Establishment stage without any bottlenecks!

“Truly, it's as if I'm Heaven's favored child,” Lü Yang couldn't help but sigh.

Of course, this breakthrough was also due to his unique nature. Despite still being in the nurturing phase, he could actively seek out resources.

Most Immortal Spirits at this stage were still in a daze, like infants, relying entirely on Heaven's provision. Let alone seeking resources, surviving without perishing was already considered fortunate. Those who did survive were typically born midway and could never truly nurture their Immortal Spirit to the perfection of the Foundation Establishment stage.

“Where can I find the remaining thirty percent?”

Lü Yang sat upright at his desk, perusing the documents in his hand. Suddenly, his eyebrows lifted slightly: “The Li Clan of Sea Harvesting... hasn't this force sent anyone over?”

“Hmm...”

At this moment, True Person Xiuxin, who was cultivating beneath the desk, took a brief respite and murmured, “The Li Clan of Sea Harvesting is the only Foundation Establishment Immortal Clan within a ten-thousand-mile radius.”

“This clan rose to prominence through maritime trade. They stumbled upon a fortuitous encounter from an unknown relic, unearthing a superior-grade spiritual treasure named the 'Territory-Expanding Ship.' Relying on this treasure, they traversed between Jiangnan and Jiangbei, amassing vast resources. Eventually, they managed to support a Foundation Establishment True Person, thus earning the title of an Immortal Clan.”

Lü Yang immediately grasped the situation.

Being a Foundation Establishment Immortal Clan, they naturally possessed more confidence than those minor Qi Refining sects. At the very least, a single Yun Clan's Ancestor wouldn't intimidate them.

However, he still lacked Geng Metal spiritual materials.

Yet, if True Person Xiuxin's information was accurate, then this Li Clan of Sea Harvesting indeed had some substance, at least not something the Yun Clan's Ancestor could easily handle.

“It seems I must make a move!”

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately concluded his cultivation session with True Person Xiuxin, retracted his superhuman state, and with a wave of his hand, a figure landed inside the room.

It was a man whose appearance was identical to Lü Yang's—handsome and dignified, yet with vacant eyes, clearly not a living being.

【Immortal Embryo Clone】 !

“Although limited by material constraints and somewhat crudely made, far inferior to the clones of my previous life, and destined to be short-lived, it's still better than nothing.”

Lü Yang performed a hand seal, and the dharma body swiftly merged with the Immortal Embryo Clone. Subsequently, he connected with the Immortal Spirit's main body, and a divine brilliance lit up at his fingertips—it was none other than the Geng Metal divine ability, 'Master of Arms.' As long as he didn't reveal his dharma body, he now appeared as a Foundation Establishment sword cultivator.

The only drawback was that the clone was too fragile to withstand his immense magical power.

Therefore, prolonged combat was not feasible.

With this in mind, Lü Yang waved his sleeve over the desk.

In the next moment, three sheets of radiant yellow paper flew out, landing in Lü Yang's palm, each exuding sharp sword energy.

【Yuan Tu Treasure Talisman】 !

These were the fruits of his recent efforts—fifth-grade Foundation Establishment talismans. They required minimal magical power to activate and wouldn't compromise the clone's stability.

'That said, continuing like this isn't sustainable. Hopefully, this Li Clan of Sea Harvesting is wealthy enough for me to gather more spiritual materials. Especially that superior-grade spiritual treasure, the 'Territory-Expanding Ship,' mentioned by True Person Xiuxin. If I could obtain it, I could forge a top-tier Immortal Embryo.'

The current one was hardly suitable for significant use.

To truly acquire an Immortal Embryo Clone capable of traversing the world and engaging in combat freely, superior-grade spiritual treasures were essential as materials.

Jiangnan, Gantang Dao.

This was a port city, facing Jiangnan on one side and the Great River on the other. Beyond the port lay an endless expanse of vast ocean.

The Li Clan of Sea Harvesting had resided here for generations.

Inside a grand hall, a dignified young man stood by the window, gazing blankly at the boundless sea beyond the port.

He was the pillar of the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting, Foundation Establishment True Person 'Xiao Hai.'

Behind him stood a stern and solemn middle-aged man—the current head of the Li Clan, respectfully standing by his side.

“True Person, are we truly not going to respond to that letter from the Yun Clan?”

The Li Clan's head appeared anxious. In Jiangnan, the Sword Pavilion was the sole behemoth. Openly refusing a True Person from the Sword Pavilion was indeed unsettling.

“Just a declining family. Their so-called search for a demon is clearly an act of extortion. No need to pay them any mind.” True Person Xiao Hai shook his head disdainfully. “Besides, I know that Yun Clan's Ancestor; he doesn't have many years left. Even if we don't go, he wouldn't dare come after us.”

“As for the Sword Pavilion... hmph!”

Mentioning this name, True Person Xiao Hai's face revealed undisguised resentment. “Our Li Clan has been harvesting the sea for them for ten generations!”

“Even for mortals, ten generations of accumulation should have yielded substantial wealth, right?”

“But where is the money?”

The wealth painstakingly earned by the Li Clan, resources meant to support their clan members and aid in cultivation—who ended up taking them?

True Person Xiao Hai didn't continue speaking, merely letting out a cold laugh. The Li Clan had toiled diligently for ten generations, yet their hardships seemed endless. If not for a fortunate encounter, there wouldn't even be a Li Clan of Sea Harvesting today; they would still be a mere minor Qi Refining family!

“Enough... compared to an old man clinging to life, 'that place' is far more important.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,287 words ]

Chapter 297: Cross-Realm Ambush, Unstoppable Might!

"Who goes there, fellow Daoist?"

Above Gantang Dao, the Sea-Howling True Person of the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting turned tense the moment he saw his brilliant divine ability shattered. His expression grew solemn as he looked towards the newcomer.

Then, he saw the escaping light suddenly split apart.

An old man with white hair and a ruddy complexion emerged. Despite his age, his back was ramrod straight and his expression carried a hint of excitement, momentarily stunning the Sea-Howling True Person.

“Old Ghost of the Yun Clan?”

"What did you say!" The Yun Clan Ancestor's expression instantly darkened at those words. He revealed the 【Yuan-Tu Talisman】 in his hand, and the dazzling sword qi from earlier reappeared.

Meanwhile, the Sea-Howling True Person let out a sigh.

In that moment of sighing, he loosened his grip on a hidden trump card within his sleeve, and the killing intent in his heart instantly faded by ninety percent.

After all, this was a True Person from the Sword Pavilion!

Unless they were prepared to flee beyond the Jiangbei River, even if the Li Clan dared to show no courtesy or even drive the other party away, they would never dare to kill him.

"What brings Daoist Yun to my Li Clan?"

The Sea-Howling True Person spoke calmly. Behind him, Gantang Dao burst into dazzling radiance, weaving into a formation that once again manifested an endless emerald sea behind him.

Because the opponent had made a high-profile entrance, even striking a stunning sword from the start, he hadn't initially considered it might be the Yun Clan Ancestor, making him naturally surprised. But once he realized it was indeed the Yun Clan Ancestor who had struck, he quickly regained his composure.

'This old thing's abilities—I'm not unaware!'

'A silver spearhead—flashy but useless! That must've been some external aid, like a spiritual treasure or a talisman used to show off!'

Faced with the Sea-Howling True Person's firm stance, the Yun Clan Ancestor immediately became enraged:

"Why have I come? Naturally to investigate the recent demonic disaster! I suspect someone in the Li Clan is colluding with the Demonic Path. Come out and face trial at once!"

As he finished, the sword qi from the 【Yuan-Tu Talisman】 grew even stronger.

However, how could the Sea-Howling True Person possibly agree to such an unreasonable demand? The aura around him surged violently: "Colluding with the Demonic Path? Fellow Daoist, aren't you going too far!"

Meanwhile, within the Li Clan on Gantang Dao—

As the Sea-Howling True Person stepped out to block the Yun Clan Ancestor, the Li Clan Patriarch, Li Qingyun, let out a sigh of relief. But as he turned his head, his expression froze.

Unbeknownst to him, a youth in a dark robe had suddenly appeared behind him. Hands clasped behind his back, his expression was relaxed, but the moment he appeared, it felt as if he became the very center of heaven and earth. His pitch-black eyes locked onto Li Qingyun, and his gaze pressed down like a mountain.

'Another True Person!?'

In an instant, Li Qingyun felt cold all over. Without a second thought, he knelt and bellowed in his loudest voice:

"Greetings, True Person!"

His voice exploded like thunder, yet within three feet of him it dissipated completely—no sound escaped. In return, he received only a mocking smile from the intruder.

Glancing around, he realized that only the space between him and the newcomer had been sealed off. Everything else appeared vague and illusory, as if nonexistent.

'Which Sword Pavilion True Person is this? Such treachery isn't like them at all!'

To Li Qingyun, Sword Pavilion True Persons were always open and upright, whether doing good or evil. No matter your tricks, they would cut through with a single sword.

But this one was entirely different!

From his actions, he had clearly used the Yun Clan Ancestor as bait to distract their True Person, then snuck in for a sneak attack!

'A beast, huh?'

Meanwhile, Lü Yang was calmly observing Li Qingyun with interest.

Direct combat was never his style. Unless absolutely necessary, he always preferred higher realm crushing lower realm, and ambushing peers.

Let the other die, not this Daoist—such was the way of a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect.

So even though he had decided to rob the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting, out of caution he had sent the Yun Clan Ancestor ahead as cannon fodder for a probe.

And it had indeed revealed some things.

Thinking of this, a rustic bronze bell appeared in his hand. He smiled at Li Qingyun and asked, "Where did you get this item?"

Li Qingyun looked up and saw the bronze bell in Lü Yang's hand. His heart instantly sank halfway. That 【Zhao Yuan Bell】 was stored deep within the clan's treasury, sealed by a Foundation Establishment formation. And now, it was in this man's hand!

'No...!'

Li Qingyun's lips trembled, and he instinctively opened his mouth to explain, only to meet Lü Yang's gaze—and his consciousness instantly sank.

Golden Talent: Puppet on Strings!

Like a breeze smoothing troubled waters, all the fear and doubt in Li Qingyun's heart vanished. His once terrified expression gradually calmed.

The next second, he explained in a natural tone: "This treasure was discovered within a fragment of a cave heaven. It seems to be a key. As long as you hold it, stand at the entrance, and shake it three times, a portal will open."

".Oh?"

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang squinted: 'A fragment of a cave heaven!? How could the Li Clan be so lucky to stumble upon such a thing?'

In that instant, Lü Yang felt no delight—only a chill.

A tiny Foundation Establishment clan had found a cave heaven fragment left by a True Person and rose to power? It didn't sound right!

Could this be another trap? Was the Sword Pavilion playing tricks too?

As Lü Yang pondered, suddenly, a divine sense descended from the sky, followed by an angry shout: "Who dares intrude into my domain!?"

The next moment, the Sea-Howling True Person descended from the heavens.

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang looked up. Not only Lü Yang, but Li Qingyun beside him, and all the members of the Li Clan within Gantang Dao did the same.

"Are you talking to me?"

The same action. The same words.

Such a simple response made the Sea-Howling True Person feel like falling into an ice cave. He looked at his familiar yet unrecognizable clansmen in disbelief.

'What sorcery is this!?'

Startled, the Sea-Howling True Person reached into his sleeve for his trump card—only to see a towering illusion manifest behind Lü Yang.

"Demon! What are you trying to do to me?"

"Sea-Howling pays respects to Master!"

Having fallen under the effects of the 【Puppet on Strings】 , the Sea-Howling True Person showed no fear on his face. Like Li Qingyun and the other Li clansmen, his face was now filled with unwavering loyalty.

Lü Yang stood in the hall, examining the treasure the Sea-Howling True Person had just offered up—

It was another talisman, seemingly of the fire attribute, powerful at a glance, clearly the trump card he had been hiding in his sleeve.

In truth, the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting had quite a bit of hidden strength.

Besides this talisman, they had a superior spiritual treasure 【Territory-Expanding Ship】 , and a powerful clan-protecting formation—top-tier for early Foundation Establishment.

Had Lü Yang foolishly stormed in head-on, giving the Sea-Howling True Person time to prepare and unleash all his means, he truly would've been at some risk. After all, this incarnation he used for this mission was of poor quality and couldn't withstand excessive magical output.

'Good thing I was cautious!'

Feigning an open path while sneaking through the shadows, Lü Yang had subdued the Sea-Howling True Person before he could do anything, and with barely any effort.

"Indeed, victory lies in ambush and cross-realm strikes..."

Lü Yang murmured thoughtfully, then turned to the Sea-Howling True Person with a serious expression: "Now, tell me in detail about the cave heaven fragment your Li Clan discovered."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,136 words ]

Chapter 298: The Long Radiant Treasurelight Cave Heaven

A Cave Heaven fragment—this was an exceptional treasure.

On a minor scale, it was at least on par with Chong Guang's 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 , containing the refined Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend Qi left behind by its former master, its value immeasurable.

On a grander scale, it could be likened to the Magnetic Divine Mountain.

It might even be considered a chance to seek the Golden Opportunity!

Thus, Lü Yang absolutely refused to believe that a family like the Li Clan could acquire such a Cave Heaven fragment. Even if they somehow had, how could they possibly have kept it hidden for so long?

“That Cave Heaven fragment lies beneath the sea of Gantang Dao.”

Daoist Xiao Hai explained, “This place wasn’t originally a port. It was only after our Li Clan ancestor discovered the Cave Heaven fragment that this port was established.”

“It was to conceal the abnormal phenomena of that Cave Heaven fragment. But the real reason we succeeded in doing so was that the fragment’s spiritual essence concealed itself, cutting off all celestial mechanisms and karmic threads, making it impossible for anyone to deduce its presence. Thus, it became our family’s possession. Our 【Territory-Expanding Ship】 was obtained from within it.”

“If Master desires, I can lead you there.”

“No need.”

Lü Yang decisively shook his head. Out of caution, he didn’t even ask for the exact location of the Cave Heaven fragment. He didn’t want to know, nor did he dare to.

‘I’d better not touch this karmic entanglement.’

Lü Yang promptly ordered Daoist Xiao Hai to retrieve a vast amount of Geng Metal spiritual materials stored in the clan’s treasure vault, along with a mid-grade spiritual treasure.

With these Geng Metal materials, he could complete the final thirty percent of nurturing his Immortal Spirit’s Foundation Establishment stage.

As for the 【Territory-Expanding Ship】 , he dared not accept it.

Who knew what kind of trap a treasure from within that Cave Heaven fragment might be hiding? His current life was far too precious to risk it on such a wild variable.

‘I’m not dead yet—clearly, no True Person has noticed me for now.’

Heart pounding with dread, Lü Yang now viewed Gantang Dao as a veritable dragon's den, fearing a True Person might jump out at any moment.

With this in mind, he immediately swept his sleeve, taking the Yun Clan Ancestor and all the treasures and vanishing from the scene.

Gone in a flash!

'Even though there's no hard evidence, and maybe there really is an opportunity, why take the risk? Better to believe it than not!'

Not only that, Lü Yang didn't even dare to let his avatar return to meet the Immortal Spirit. Instead, he picked a location, buried the items, and had the avatar self-destruct, sending his consciousness back to the main body. He immediately empowered himself with the marvelous 【Clarity】 ability, and only after confirming he could still think did he feel safe again.

'Now, even a True Person shouldn't be able to find me.'

With the 【Calamity Wave】 in play, this lifetime's Lü Yang remained extremely hidden—unless he walked directly under a True Person's nose, discovery was impossible.

With that, he confidently activated the 【Puppet Master】 ability.

This golden talent had another marvelous use.

As the puppeteer, Lü Yang could use this talent to remotely observe every puppet he controlled, borrowing their perspective.

Soon, the scene at Gantang Dao appeared before Lü Yang's eyes.

After his departure, Daoist Xiao Hai and the Li Clan members first looked dazed, then gradually their gazes cleared.

"What just happened? I can't quite remember."

Daoist Xiao Hai pondered for a moment, feeling something was off, but quickly dismissed the notion and looked to Patriarch Li Qingyun.

"No time to lose, let's prepare and explore 【that place】!"

Li Qingyun was briefly stunned, instinctively thinking they were rushing—but then reconsidered. For the family's sake, a little urgency was reasonable.

"Understood! I'll get things ready right away."

Soon, the entire Li Clan mobilized without a word, united in their determination to explore that Cave Heaven fragment.

Lü Yang watched with a satisfied smile.

‘Though I lack the courage to explore that fragment myself, I certainly have the guts to send cannon fodder—and lots of it!’

Under Lü Yang’s influence, the Li Clan became a flurry of activity, preparing formations, talismans, and magical tools. Finally, led by Daoist Xiao Hai, they arrived at a secluded chamber within the Li Clan estate, connecting to the deepest part of Gantang Dao’s sea. Yet, what greeted them was emptiness.

‘Where’s the Cave Heaven fragment?’

Doubt rose in Lü Yang’s heart. Just then, as if prompted by his thoughts, Li Qingyun suddenly sighed with emotion, “Worthy of a True Person’s handiwork.”

“This Cave Heaven fragment shows no mystical traits ordinarily.”

“Only at noon, when sunlight pierces the sea, does the fragment’s form reflect underwater—only then can it be entered.”

Daoist Xiao Hai nodded in agreement, “Truly mysterious.”

Both showed no sign that this sudden explanation was out of place.

Soon, noon arrived.

Sunlight entered the sea, and indeed the image of the Cave Heaven fragment was reflected below: a vast ruin of broken walls and collapsed palaces—an utterly dilapidated sight.

Daoist Xiao Hai’s expression brightened. He immediately took out the 【Zhaoyuan Bell】 and rang it. The melodious chime rippled through the water, its ancient tune causing the illusory Cave Heaven fragment to become increasingly solid, eventually revealing a true entrance before them.

“Let’s go!”

In the past, Daoist Xiao Hai would have hesitated—he was the Li Clan’s only Foundation Establishment cultivator, and couldn’t take risks lightly.

But now, he acted decisively.

The next second, he transformed into a streak of light and flew into the Cave Heaven fragment, where he immediately felt the world spin—then crashed heavily to the ground.

“Pff!”

Daoist Xiao Hai spat out a mouthful of blood, but paid no attention to his injury, greedily examining his surroundings.

Inside this Cave Heaven fragment was a most peculiar sight: beyond the ruins, it was a sea of unending fire, blazing eternally, snaking through the fragment like a colossal serpent. At its head stood a half-collapsed palace.

The vision of a Cave Heaven often reflected the path its master pursued.

Through Daoist Xiao Hai’s eyes, Lü Yang silently examined the towering fire serpent and soon deduced its origin.

‘Is that... 【Si Fire】?’

Lü Yang furrowed his brows. 【Si Fire】 belonged to the Earth Fiend constellation—yin fire with a serpent aspect, implying a yang resurgence amidst pervasive yin.

There was only one talent divine ability Lü Yang had seen refined from this celestial and fiendish essence.

In his past life, Chong Guang used it to forge his final talent divine ability— 【Rigid Flame Furnace】 —which corresponded with his fruit position, 【Inverted Lamp Flame】  
!

‘Could it be—’

A suspicion sprang up in Lü Yang’s mind. As Daoist Xiao Hai’s gaze landed on a corner of the Cave Heaven fragment, that suspicion was confirmed.

Amid the ruins, at the serpent's head within the broken palace, a half-burned plaque peeked through the flames.

The other half lay inside the palace.

When the two were combined, a name emerged clearly:

【Long Radiant Treasurelight Cave Heaven】

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 299 : A Frightening Scene, Encountering Ang Xiao Again!

[ 1,519 words ]

Chapter 299: A Frightening Scene, Encountering Ang Xiao Again!

Changyao Baoguang Cave Heaven!

This name alone occupied only a minuscule portion in Lü Yang's memories from his previous life. If not for his high cultivation, he might not have recalled it at all.

'In the past, Uncle-Master Chongguang mentioned it to me.'

'True Person of Heavenly Fortune and Bright Light opened palaces, established a cave heaven, with myriad truths coming to pay homage, titled 【Changyao Baoguang Cave Heaven】 , like the rising sun hanging high, not falling from the clouds for a thousand years.'

'Daoist Hong Yun!'

The so-called 【True Person of Heavenly Fortune and Bright Light】 was the Daoist title of Daoist Hong Yun before his reincarnation, and 【Changyao Baoguang Cave Heaven】 was his symbol.

'This cave heaven fragment actually belonged to Daoist Hong Yun!?'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's thoughts immediately became active. After all, among matters related to True Persons, Daoist Hong Yun was the easiest to handle.

Back then, even the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak dared to howl at him!

The cave heaven fragment he left behind naturally wouldn't be too dangerous, and it was very likely that some good things were left inside!

Lü Yang recalled seeing Daoist Hong Yun in his previous life. At that time, the other party had already restored his cultivation to the peak of Foundation Establishment and had refined a 【Treasure Radiant Blessed Land】 . Thinking about it now, perhaps it was because he found this cave heaven fragment here and refined it that he was able to recover!

‘A blessed land...’

Lü Yang's eyes turned. 【Si Fire】 was the fire of smelting, the longevity of gold. If he, as a Geng Metal Immortal Spirit in this life, could nurture himself within it, the benefits would be immense!

However, in the next second, Lü Yang regained his composure: “No rush, haste makes waste, patience brings peace. Let Daoist Xiao Hai explore it thoroughly first.”

With this thought, Daoist Xiao Hai, who had been intimidated by the terrifying scene of the cave heaven fragment and the fire serpent transformed from Si Fire, and had a faint intention to retreat, immediately changed his mind: ‘It's not easy for me to come in. If I can't bring something back for my clan, how can I face the years of their support?’

Thinking of this, Daoist Xiao Hai felt a stroke of luck:

‘My Li family has cultivated for ten generations. Being able to obtain this heavenly opportunity is a sign of fortune. Perhaps there is no risk.’

Take a gamble!

With this thought, Daoist Xiao Hai immediately gathered his mana, and at the same time, a palm-sized golden boat appeared in his hand, emitting a vast fluctuation of energy.

Superior spiritual treasure 【Territory-Expanding Ship】 !

The marvel of this magical tool was called 【Territory-Expanding】 , capable of breaking disasters and resolving difficulties. With its blessing at this moment, Daoist Xiao Hai felt more confident.

Immediately, under the protection of the spiritual treasure, he strode into the dilapidated palace at the serpent's head. Then, he saw at the center of the palace, on an ancient desk, three jade slips placed prominently, bathed in the light of Si Fire, not only undamaged but also glowing brilliantly.

‘Opportunity!’

Daoist Xiao Hai became even more excited. Without regard for the damage to the 【Territory-Expanding Ship】 , he braved the might and scorching of Si Fire, step by step, arriving before the desk.

With a sweep of his divine sense, the contents of the three jade slips immediately entered his mind.

Through Daoist Xiao Hai's perspective, Lü Yang naturally took it all in. He saw that the nature of the three jade slips covered different domains.

‘《True Explanation of Observing Heaven and Earth Within the Void》, 《Upper Bright Golden Lamp Jade Light》, 《Bright Light Daily Records》.’

Lü Yang's eyes lit up instantly!

With his current level of cultivation, he could naturally see the value of the three jade slips. Without exaggeration, each one was a priceless treasure in the outside world!

‘《True Explanation of Observing Heaven and Earth Within the Void》, this is a secret method for creating blessed lands and constructing cave heavens!’

This wasn't meant for ordinary True Persons!

To use this, one must at least be a great True Person at the peak of Foundation Establishment, and only at the level of a True Monarch could its marvels be truly utilized!

‘Such a secret method was probably deduced by Daoist Hong Yun in his days as the 【True Person of Heavenly Fortune and Bright Light】, used for managing his own cave heaven, and perhaps also involved in the cultivation of a True Monarch. But such a marvelous method, which almost touches upon the fundamental cultivation of a True Monarch, how could it be left here?’

Lü Yang closed his spiritual platform tightly, his expression becoming increasingly tense.

The second jade slip, 《Upper Bright Golden Lamp Jade Light》, was equally astonishing in content. It was a secret method used to sense the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】, also a foundation of a True Monarch!

‘This is almost unattainable!’

‘Because this is equivalent to a True Monarch on the fruit position deliberately opening a backdoor on the fruit position, and then recording the key to the backdoor.’

How is this different from seeking death?

Such fundamental matters, passing them on to others, letting them compete for the position with oneself?

'No, this should have been left by Daoist Hong Yun for himself, probably as a backdoor he planned to use to reclaim the fruit position after his thousand-year lifespan ended and he reincarnated!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's face gradually showed a suspicious look.

This doesn't seem right. Judging from this, Daoist Hong Yun was clearly prepared for his reincarnation, and very thoroughly, with all aspects ready.

But what was the result?

'According to Uncle-Master Chongguang, he perished in the great calamity five thousand years ago, and during the entire five thousand years, despite frequent reincarnations, he never reclaimed the position.'

'...He didn't even attempt it.'

'There are already few remaining fruit positions today. It was precisely because of this that Uncle-Master Chongguang decided to seek the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 and compete for the position with Daoist Hong Yun.'

At that time, it seemed fine, but looking at it now... it doesn't make sense!

At least judging from the first two jade slips, Daoist Hong Yun's preparations were quite thorough, and there was no reason he couldn't attempt to reclaim the position in five thousand years.

Soon, Lü Yang followed Daoist Xiao Hai's gaze to the third jade slip.

《Bright Light Daily Records》 .

This was relatively simpler, being Daoist Hong Yun's diary, recording his insights and experiences while still in the position of a True Monarch.

However, in the next second, Lü Yang was greatly shocked.

Because on one page of the 《Bright Light Daily Records》 , it was written:

"Recently discovered that 【Chen Earth】 seems to have changed. Unfortunately, it's during the thousand-year great calamity, with the heavenly mechanism obscured, making it difficult to calculate cause and effect. Further investigation should be arranged."

【Chen Earth】 !

Lü Yang never expected that Daoist Hong Yun had already discovered the anomaly of 【Chen Earth】 five thousand years ago, while still in the position of a True Monarch!

But with this, everything made sense.

The reason Daoist Hong Yun perished in the past while still a True Monarch was definitely because Ang Xiao secretly acted against him! Because he knew too much!

'Even the jade slips here are wrong! These jade slips weren't left by Daoist Hong Yun! How could secret methods concerning one's own path be written down? If it were me, I would definitely remember them in my heart. The reason they became jade slips was probably because they were forcibly extracted from Daoist Hong Yun's memory!'

【Knowledge Obstruction】 !

Only this could explain Daoist Hong Yun's situation.

Why couldn't he reclaim the position for five thousand years? Because the two backup methods he left behind in his lifetime, and the related memories, were all forcibly removed and forgotten!

Without 《True Explanation of Observing Heaven and Earth Within the Void》 , it would be difficult for him to reforge the blessed land and cave heaven.

Without 《Upper Bright Golden Lamp Jade Light》 , he couldn't perfectly sense the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 .

Lacking these two, how is it different from seeking the golden path from scratch? If someone were to interfere further, it's entirely normal that he couldn't reclaim the position for five thousand years!

'Wait a minute...'

Suddenly, Lü Yang's expression changed. In his previous life, Daoist Hong Yun did reforge the blessed land, indicating that he eventually found this cave heaven fragment.

But as the mastermind behind the scenes, would 【Ang Xiao】 allow such a thing to happen?

In his previous life, Daoist Hong Yun was killed by True Monarch Feixue. Why? Because of the Blood Demon Daoist. At that time, he didn't think much and fell into his own trap...

'...Hiss!'

At this moment, even though he was only borrowing Daoist Xiao Hai's perspective, Lü Yang still felt an indescribable, bone-chilling coldness.

Because at the end of Daoist Xiao Hai's line of sight.

Amidst the flickering Si Fire, a figure suddenly appeared.

He stood in the fire, observing Daoist Xiao Hai with great interest, as if he had never left, only that Daoist Xiao Hai had never remembered him.

In an instant, Lü Yang almost stopped thinking.

‘【Ang Xiao】!!!’

Dark eyes, a smiling gaze, at this moment, seemed to penetrate Daoist Xiao Hai's flesh, falling upon Lü Yang hiding behind him.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 300 : In the Sword Pavilion, Heart Toward the Primordial Saint**

[ 1,547 words ]

Chapter 300: In the Sword Pavilion, Heart Toward the Primordial Saint

To be honest, Lü Yang had never expected to meet Ang Xiao again in this lifetime, and certainly not in such a dramatic and abrupt situation.

‘This isn’t right, calm down.’

Lü Yang clenched his teeth, suppressing the urge to flee: ‘The one exploring the 【Changyao Treasure Light Cave Heaven】 is Daoist Xiao Hai, what does that have to do with me?’

‘With the 【Puppet Strings】 as a barrier, he can’t see me!’

It was just an intimidation tactic!

Lü Yang was one hundred percent confident in this, as this golden talent was bestowed by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 .

【Puppet Strings: Seize another's fate, inherit their karma, and you can hide beneath their appearance, manipulating them like a puppet. No one can trace the origin.】

If it claimed no one could trace it, then no one could!

Stay strong!

The confidence from the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes forced Lü Yang to stabilize his emotions, continuing to use Daoist Xiao Hai's line of sight to directly stare at 【Ang Xiao】 .

In that moment, everything fell into absolute silence.

“.”

Even the rising Si Fire froze in mid-air. The sparks that should have danced around hung motionless, and though the surroundings should have been boiling hot, it now felt as frigid as winter.

Daoist Xiao Hai's expression was frozen in that instant of terror, even his thoughts halted. The only thing moving within this fragment of Cave Heaven was the silhouette standing amidst the fire. He rested one hand on his cheek, the other folded across his chest, eyes blazing as he fixed his gaze on Daoist Xiao Hai.

His gaze was like a torch.

The fluctuations in Daoist Xiao Hai's energy, his magical power, the dilation of his pupils, shifts in his sight, and the karma surrounding him—all were captured fully by that gaze.

【Ang Xiao】 's smile faded slightly.

“Which fellow Daoist?”

He spoke slowly, and his voice made the entire fragment of Cave Heaven tremble. The Si Fire resumed flowing, slowly creeping up Daoist Xiao Hai's body!

In just a blink, dense serpents of flame engulfed Daoist Xiao Hai, crawling into his seven orifices, flooding his organs and spiritual sea. The roaring fire illuminated this pitiful Foundation Establishment Daoist, making his body nearly transparent—any anomaly was impossible to conceal.

Yet 【Ang Xiao】 found nothing.

‘An illusion?’

The vast Cave Heaven still held only himself. This result flashed a trace of confusion in his eyes, but that soon gave way to certainty:

‘Impossible!’

‘My senses aren’t wrong—someone is watching me, using this Foundation Establishment Daoist as a medium. But I can’t identify... who?’

In this world, there were few people he could call “Daoist.” After all, he monopolized five fruit positions on his own, leaving none for others. Such a feat was rare. As someone who had broken through to the late Golden Core stage with such a method, he was among the strongest—how else could he scheme against the Underworld?

‘Could it be... a Dao Lord watching me?’

【Ang Xiao】’s gaze turned cautious. He did know of one similar method: the Pure Land! That Venerable of the Groove liked using such means.

‘But it doesn’t make sense. What would make me worthy of a Dao Lord’s attention?’

His gaze grew colder as he sized up Daoist Xiao Hai. The man was strong, very strong—but far from enough to attract the attention of any of the four Dao Lords.

They were simply not on the same level.

If the mortal world was a vast sea of suffering where all beings sank, only a True Person could ascend by achieving the Fruit Position, using it as a boat to sail above the sea.

Then a Dao Lord had already transcended the sea, reaching the other shore.

The world and concerns in a Dao Lord’s eyes were already beyond the mundane, fundamentally different from anyone else’s—and certainly not focused on him.

‘Should I... kill him?’

【Ang Xiao】 frowned. This Li Clan of Sea Harvesting was a carefully selected pawn of his, used to conceal this fragment of Cave Heaven for many years.

But not to bury it entirely.

Rather, to leave some trace.

Because only in this way, when Daoist Hong Yun exhausted himself and finally found this Cave Heaven fragment, he wouldn't suspect a thing.

Even the first two jade slips, 《True Explanation of the Internal Observation of the Void》 and 《Upper Radiant Golden Cup Jade Light》, were intact—otherwise, they couldn't have fooled Hong Yun. The real tampering was not in this knowledge but in the Cave Heaven fragment itself!

Once Daoist Hong Yun absorbed this Cave Heaven and made it his own blessed land—  
His scheme would be complete.

But if Daoist Xiao Hai died here, that would not be certain anymore.

'Even though I used the Knowledge Barrier to make Hong Yun forget the cause of death and suspicion toward the 【Earth of the Stars】, even stripped him of his fallback for reclaiming the Fruit Position—'

'He's still a True Person.'

'After five thousand years, even with the Knowledge Barrier, he must have realized something's wrong. Now, Hong Yun is likely as skittish as a frightened bird.'

'In such a situation, if this Foundation Establishment Daoist dies here, Hong Yun would certainly become suspicious, and that would birth many variables—no, from the moment this Foundation Establishment Daoist appeared here, my plan already had a variable!'

But where did this variable come from?

【Ang Xiao】 calculated with his fingers, but gained nothing. His brows furrowed deeply—this was the first time he felt a lack of control.

'...Forget it, let the unchanging meet all changes.'

In the next second, 【Ang Xiao】 calmed down, stepped back, and his figure melted into the raging Si Fire once more.

Then time resumed.

Daoist Xiao Hai blinked. The previous terror vanished as if it had never happened, quickly fading—he'd already forgotten why he had been so terrified.

He hadn't encountered anything major.

Nor found any great opportunity.

“What a pity.”

Thinking this, Daoist Xiao Hai couldn't help but sigh, “Who would've thought this Cave Heaven was empty? Not a single treasure. Came here for nothing.”

As he spoke, he ignored the three jade slips on the table.

Next moment, he turned and decisively left the Cave Heaven. Behind him, 【Ang Xiao】 silently watched his back.

‘Unknown Daoist... interesting.’

A warm smile slowly spread across his face. After over five thousand years of solitary scheming, a bit of unpredictability was actually delightful.

‘Let me see what move you'll make!’

“I'm outta here!”

Withdrawing his view from 【Puppet Strings】 , Lü Yang patted his chest in lingering fear. “This lifetime, I'm not stepping near Gantang Dao again!”

That wretched place was too dangerous!

That said, a daring thought rose in Lü Yang's heart: “But Uncle-Master Chong Guang would definitely be interested in that Cave Heaven...”

The method of creating a Cave Heaven blessed land!

The method of sensing 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 !

At this point in time, Chong Guang probably hadn't reincarnated yet. These two methods would be enough to spur him into action, and once he came, how could True Person Feixue not come too?

‘That 『Chronicles of Ming Light』 clearly records suspicion toward the 【Earth of the Stars】 . If I can get Chong Guang to see it, he'll be on guard, and I'll also build goodwill. Later, I can obtain his reincarnated Immortal Spirit Body, and that Xin Metal Qi.’

【Pomegranate Wood】 was a fusion of Gengshen and Xinyou.

Since this life he planned to prove the path of 【Pomegranate Wood】 , Xin Metal Qi was crucial. Planting the seeds early was wise.

Not to mention getting True Person Feixue to fight Ang Xiao!

If 【Ang Xiao】's existence was exposed early, then the grand-scale gold-seeking campaign by Chong Guang in the previous life would be even more spectacular in this one.

That would be his chance!

'Roughly a hundred years left.'

Lü Yang thought, a clear plan forming in his mind:

'In a hundred years, I must nurture the Immortal Spirit Body to Foundation Establishment perfection, and ideally, connect with Suo Huan, letting him and Chong Guang go gold-seeking together.'

'With those two elite talents drawing all attention—'

'I can calmly lay my groundwork, emerging as a perfected Foundation Establishment Immortal Spirit, and when no one can stop me, directly achieve the True Person Fruit Position!'

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Inside a spacious grand hall sat a man not particularly handsome, but with a heroic sharpness between his brows, occupying the head seat.

It was none other than True Person Chong Guang!

In his hand was a radiant flying message—the one Lü Yang had previously sent with a spell, detailing the secret of the Jiangnan Mass Grave.

Additionally, Lü Yang described how he reincarnated into Jiangnan, acting as an undercover agent, remaining in the Sword Pavilion with his heart loyal to the Primordial Saint Sect. It made Chong Guang click his tongue in amazement.

Traitors to the Saint Sect were actually quite common.

After all, among the four great sects, only the Saint Sect had a worse environment—and the Pure Land allowed entry but not exit, so it had no risk of rebellion.

In comparison, the Sword Pavilion and Dao Court were much better.

So many ordinary True Persons with no future in their path chose not to return to the Saint Sect after reincarnation, instead changing identities to join the Sword Pavilion or Dao Court.

But of all who left, this was the first one to send back a message declaring loyalty to the Saint Sect.

“Interesting...”

True Person Chong Guang looked at the name signed at the end of the message and fell into a brief silence: “Yuan Tu... our Saint Sect still has such a loyal True Person?”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.